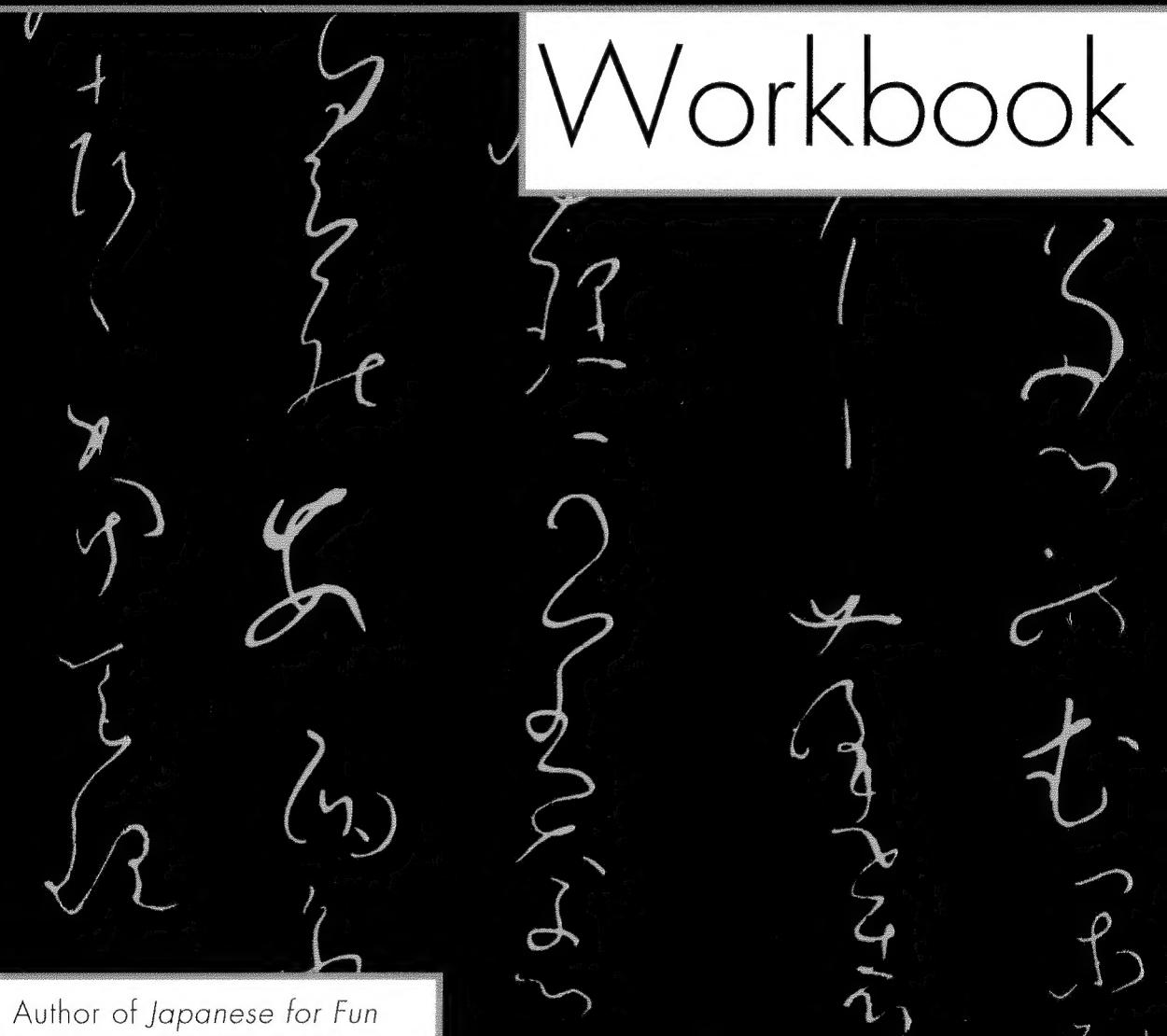


Japanese PARTICLE

Workbook



Author of *Japanese for Fun*

TAEKO KAMIYA

and Speak Japanese Today



TAEKO KAMIYA

Japanese

PARTICLE

Workbook

WEATHERHILL



New York & Tokyo

Copyright © 1997 by Taeko Kamiya.

Protected by copyright under the terms of the International Copyright Union; all rights reserved. Except for fair use in book reviews, no part of this book may be reproduced for any reason by any means, including any method of photographic reproduction, without written permission.

First edition, 1998

Second printing, 2003

Published by Weatherhill, Inc., of New York and Tokyo, with editorial offices at 568 Broadway, Suite 705, New York, N.Y. 10012.

Printed in the U.S.A.

ISBN 0-8348-0404-2

Contents

Introduction	14	mo (2)	31	ni (6)	
Key to Abbreviations	15	ni (3)	32	ni (7)	
Japanese Particle Workbook	16	ni (4)	33	to (3)	
	17	de (1)	34	to (4)	
1	wa (1)	18	to (2)	35	to ka (1)
2	ka (1)	19	no (2)	36	de (3)
3	ga (1)	20	kara (1)	37	to (5)
4	ni (1)	21	yori (1)	38	yori (2)
5	no (1)	22	made (1)	39	yori (3)
6	wa (2)	23	kurai (1)	40	kurai (2)
7	ni (2)	24	hodo (1)	41	hodo (2)
8	e (1)	25	bakari (1)	42	ka (3)
9	o (1)	26	de (2)	43	mo (3)
10	to (1)	27	ka (2)	44	ni (8)
11	ya (1)	28	o (2)	45	o (4)
12	nado (1)	29	o (3)	46	demo (1)
13	mo (1)	30	ni (5)	47	demo (2)

48	de (4)	72	no (4)	96	noni (2)
49	kara (2)	73	no (5)	97	no (6)
50	ni (9)	74	nara (1)	98	kiri (1)
51	ga (2)	75	nara (2)	99	kiri (2)
52	ga (3)	76	to (6)	100	tomo (1)
53	o (5)	77	ba (1)	101	nagara (3)
54	de (5)	78	ba (2)	102	shika (1)
55	de (6)	79	ba (3)	103	shika (2)
56	dake (1)	80	tara (1)	104	shi (1)
57	dake (2)	81	tara (2)	105	shi (2)
58	de (7)	82	tokoro (2)	106	tomo (2)
59	demo (3)	83	te mo (1)	107	ni (10)
60	mo (4)	84	te mo (2)	108	ka (4)
61	demo (4)	85	te mo (3)	109	ka (5)
62	bakari (2)	86	te wa (1)	110	dano (1)
63	bakari (3)	87	nomi (1)	111	dano (2)
64	tokoro (1)	88	made (2)	112	nado (2)
65	ga (4)	89	sae (1)	113	yara (1)
66	kara (3)	90	sae (2)	114	yara (2)
67	nagara (1)	91	noni (1)	115	te mo (4)
68	ga (5)	92	nagara (2)	116	tomo (3)
69	no (3)	93	toka (1)	117	wa (3)
70	kara (4)	94	tari (1)	118	to (7)
71	node (1)	95	tari (2)	119	nado (3)

120	kurai (3)	144	nomi (2)	168	yo (1)
121	hodo (3)	145	nari (3)	169	yo (2)
122	hodo (4)	146	ga (7)	170	kashira (1)
123	dake (3)	147	ya (2)	171	kana (1)
124	dake (4)	148	ka (6)	172	na (1)
125	to (8)	149	bakari (5)	173	na (2)
126	to (9)	150	bakari (6)	174	nā (1)
127	nari (1)	151	sura (1)	175	nā (2)
128	nari (2)	152	nado (4)	176	no (7)
129	koso (1)	153	tomo (5)	177	wa (1)
130	koso (2)	154	tomo (6)	178	sa (1)
131	te wa (2)	155	dokoro ka (1)	179	koto (1)
132	ni (11)	156	dake ni (1)	180	koto (2)
133	ni (12)	157	made (3)	181	mono (1)
134	ni shite wa (1)	158	mono no (1)	182	tomo (7)
135	ni totte (1)	159	tokoro de (1)	183	mono ka (1)
136	ni tsuite (1)	160	keredomo (1)	184	ya (3)
137	tomo (4)	161	keredomo (2)	185	tara (3)
138	ga (6)	162	ga (8)	186	yara (3)
139	wa (4)	163	keredomo (3)	187	ze (1)
140	toshite (1)	164	ne (1)	188	zo (1)
141	toshite (2)	165	ne (2)		
142	bakari (4)	166	ne (3)		Alphabetical Finding List
143	dake (5)	167	nē (1)		Answers to Exercises



Introduction

What are Japanese particles? Particles are non-conjugate words that attach to main words and indicate the relationship of those words to the following word or the remainder of the sentence. There are also sentence-final particles that may comment grammatically on the entire sentence.

Some Japanese particles function in a manner similar to English words. For example, in the phrase *sensei to gakusei* (teacher and student) the particle *to* functions as the conjunction "and." Other particles have functions similar to prepositions, but they are placed after the words they modify, e.g., *Tokyo e* (to Tokyo), *Oda-san to* (with Mr. Oda). Still other particles have no equivalents in English, such as *wa* or *o*, which are attached to the topic (subject) or object of a sentence respectively, as in *Honda-san wa isha desu* (As for Mr. Honda, he's a doctor) and *Hon o yomimashita* (I read a book).

Are particles important? Absolutely. They must be learned in order to speak proper Japanese. Some particles may be omitted in casual conversation but not when formality is appropriate, and especially not in writing. Moreover, in some cases the wrong use of a particle may change the meaning of sentence entirely.

This book presents over 60 particles and their 188 usages. The particles are introduced in order of the frequency of their usage, from more common to less. Most particles are multi-functional, e.g., *Nihon de* (in Japan),

basu de (by bus), *shigoto de* (because of work); therefore, each is followed by a number denoting the order of that particular usage: *de* (1), *de* (2), etc.

Each of the 188 usages is described briefly and then illustrated in sample sentences. After several particles and usages are introduced, exercises are given to test your understanding; answers appear at the end of the book. Only particles already introduced appear in the examples or exercises, although, of course, those already learned are used again for reinforcement. In order to get the best results, repeat examples and exercise sentences aloud, so that your ears get used to the sounds. A basic vocabulary is used for all sentences, which are presented in both characters and romanized Japanese, enabling you to concentrate fully on one purpose: learning particles.

This book may also be used as a reference work, for it contains an Alphabetical Finding List for all the particles, which may be consulted to refer to an explanation and example for any usage. Note that the usage numbers (1 through 188) take the place of page numbers for finding specific usages; likewise exercise numbers are used to find their corresponding set of correct answers. Overall, the book is designed in a way that will lead you step-by-step to a deeper understanding of Japanese particles and a greater facility with them. I do hope that it will prove to be of great help for all who use it.

Key to Abbreviations

V-verb

present, past, and progressive forms of the verb

V-u

dictionary form of the verb

V-te

te-form of the verb

V-nakute

negative te-form of the verb

V-nai

nai-form of the verb

V-ta

ta-form of the verb

V-nakatta

negative ta-form of the verb

V-tai

tai-form of the verb

V-tari

tari-form of the verb

V-nakattari

negative tari-form of the verb

V-mai

mai-form of the verb

V-(masu)

masu-form of the verb without masu e.g.
mi(masu), yomi(masu)

V-ba (V-e/-re + ba)

ba-form of the verb e.g. ikeba/mireba

V-nakereba

negative ba-form of the verb

V-ō/-yō

ō-form of the verb e.g. ikō/miyō

Adjective

present and past forms of the adjective

Adj.

Adjective

Adj. Noun

Adjectival Noun e.g. kirei na

Adj-i

dictionary form of the adjective

Adj-ku

ku-form of the adjective

Adj-kute

te-form of the adjective

Adj-kunakute

negative te-form of the adjective

Adj-katta

ta-form of the adjective

Adj-kattari

tari-form of the adjective

Adj-kunakattari

negative tari-form of the adjective

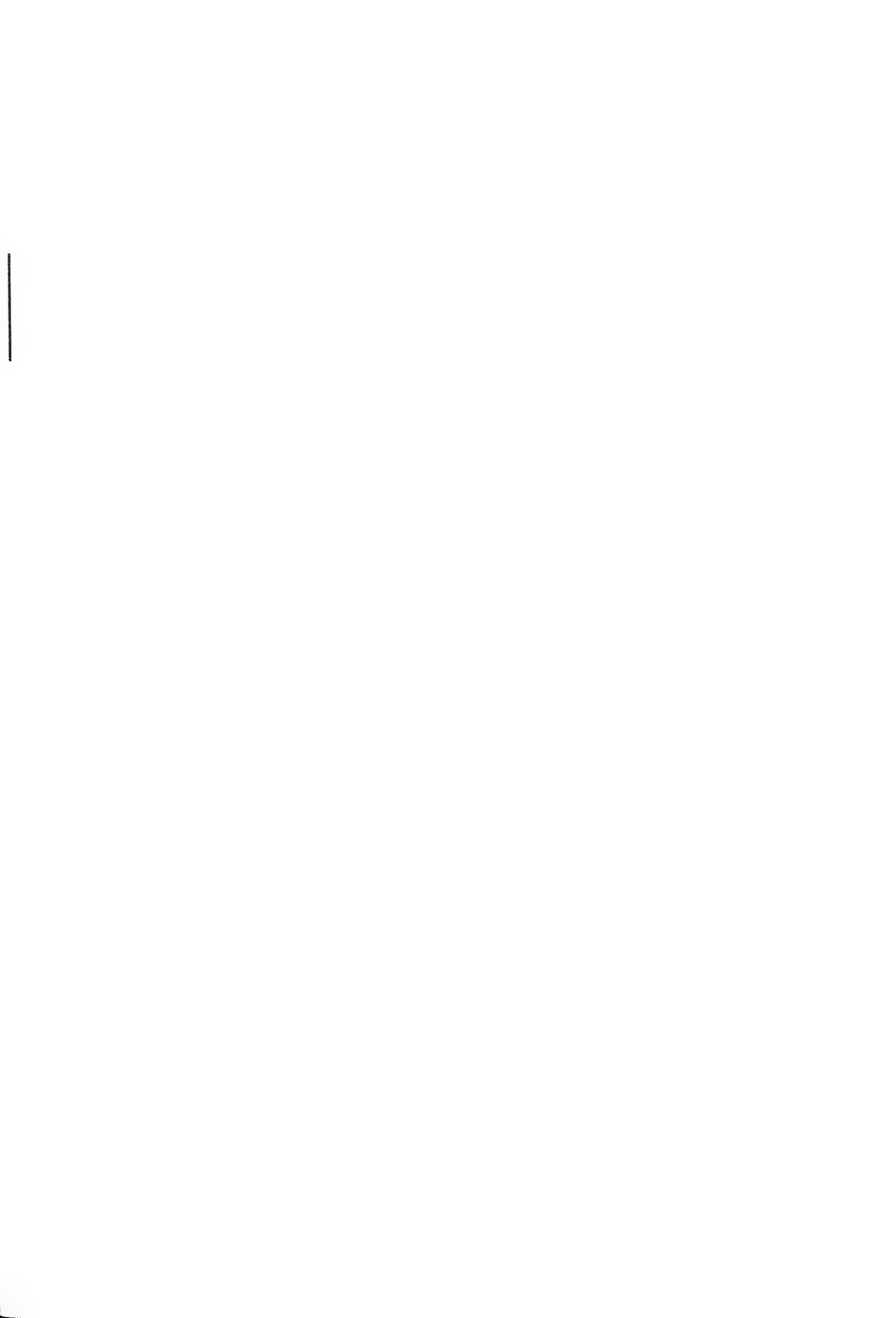
Adj-kereba (Adj-kere + ba)

ba-form of the adjective

Adj-karō

ō-form of the adjective, e.g. samukarō

Japanese PARTICLE Workbook



Indicates the topic of a sentence, conveying the meaning "as for..."

wa (の) は

Noun (topic = subject) + wa

Watashi **wa** isha desu.

私は医者です。

I am a doctor.

(As for me, I'm a doctor.)

Wada-san **wa** ashita kimasu.

和田さんは明日来ます。

Mr. Wada will come tomorrow.

Sono eiga **wa** omoshiroi desu.

その映画は面白いです。

The movie is interesting.

Kujira **wa** sakana de wa arimasen.

くじらは魚ではありません。

The whale isn't a fish.

Noun (topic ≠ subject) + wa

Ashita **wa** hatarakimasen.

明日は働きません。

Tomorrow I don't work.

Kaidan **wa** chūi shite kudasai.

階段は注意して下さい。

Be careful about the stairs.

Sono koto **wa** mō hanashita.

その事はもう話した。

I have already spoken about the matter.

Note: As the above examples indicate, the "topic" of a sentence can be, but is not always, the same as the subject of an English sentence.

At the end of a sentence, indicates a question.

ka (か)

Sentence + ka

Anata **wa** gakusei desu **ka**.

あなたは学生ですか。

Are you a student?

Sumisu-san **wa** bengoshi desu **ka**.

スマスさんは弁護士ですか。

Is Mr. Smith a lawyer?

Kono hon **wa** omoshiroi desu **ka**.

この本は面白いですか。

Is this book interesting?

Ashita **wa** doyōbi desu **ka**.

明日は土曜日ですか。

Is tomorrow Saturday?

Tanaka-san **wa** kimashita **ka**.

田中さんは来ましたか。

Did Miss Tanaka come?

Ano kaidan **wa** tsukaimasen **ka**.

あの階段は使いませんか。

Don't you use that stairs?

Noun + wa + interrogative ... ka

Kore wa nan desu **ka**.
これは何ですか。

What is this?

Ano hito wa dare desu **ka**.
あの人はだれですか。

Who is that person?

Yamada-san wa dono kata desu **ka**.
山田さんはどの方ですか。

Which person is Mr. Yamada?

が ga (↑)

Indicates the subject of a sentence when it is newly introduced or emphasized.

Noun (new information) + ga

Kōen **ga** arimasu.
公園があります。

There is a park.

Tori **ga** imasu.
鳥がいます。

There are birds.

Kodomo **ga** asonde imasu.
子供が遊んでいます。

Children are playing.

Hana **ga** saite imasu. Hana wa
kirei desu.

花が咲いています。花はきれいです。

The flowers are blooming. They're pretty.

Note: The subject "hana" of the first sentence is followed by ga, while the topic "hana" of the second sentence (already known information) is followed by wa. Ga is used to mark an interrogative word used as a subject, as well as following the subject of the answering sentence (since this is new information).

Noun (emphasized) + ga

Kono kata **ga** Oda-san desu.
この方が小田さんです。

This person is Mr. Oda (whom I told you about).

Watashi **ga** ikimashita.
私が行きました。

I (not anyone else) went.

Interrogative pronoun + ga

Dare **ga** kimashita ka. Buraun-san **ga**
kimashita.

だれが来ましたか。ブラウンさんが
きました。

Who came? Mr. Brown came.

Nani **ga** okorimashita ka. Jiko **ga**
okorimashita.

何が起きましたか。事故が起こりました。

What happened? An accident happened.

Exercise 1 (1-3): Fill in the blanks with the correct particles (wa or ga).

1. Buraun-san _____ bengoshi desu.

ブラウンさん _____ 弁護士です。

Mr. Brown is a lawyer.

2. Kōen _____ arimasu. Kodomo _____ asonde imasu.

公園 _____ あります。子供 _____ 遊んでいます。

There is a park. Children are playing.

3. Tori _____ imasu. Tori _____ kirei desu.

鳥 _____ います。鳥 _____ きれいです。

There are birds. They are pretty.

4. Ano kaidan _____ tsukawanaide kudasai.

あの階段 _____ 使わないで下さい。

Don't use that staircase.

5. Doyōbi _____ dare _____ kimasu ka. Oda-san _____ kimasu.

土曜日 _____ だれ _____ 来ますか。小田さん _____ 来ます。

As for Saturday, who is coming? Mr. Oda is coming.

6. Dono hito _____ Wada-san desu ka. Ano hito _____ Wada-san desu.

どの人 _____ 和田さんですか。のの人 _____ 和田さんです。

Which person is Mr. Wada? That one is.

7. Gakusei _____ kimashita. Gakusei _____ Sumisu-san desu.

学生 _____ 来ました。学生 _____ スミスさんです。

A student came. The student is Mr. Smith.

8. Dono eiga _____ omoshiroi desu ka.

どの映画 _____ 面白いですか。

Which movie is interesting?

9. Ashita _____ hatarakimasen.

明日 _____ 働きません。

As for tomorrow, I won't work.

10. Iie, Wada-san _____ isha de wa arimasen. Yamada-san _____ isha desu.

いいえ、和田さん _____ 医者ではありません。山田さん _____ 医者です。

No, Mr. Wada isn't a doctor. Mr. Yamada is.

に ni (l)

Indicates the location or existence of
animate and inanimate things.

Noun (location) + ni

Asoko **ni** kōen ga arimasu.
あそこに公園があります。

There is a park over there.

Ano kado **ni** nani ga arimasu ka.
あの角に何がありますか。

What is there at that corner?

Kōen **ni** kodomo ga imasu.
公園に子供がいます。

There are children in the park.

Heya **ni** dare ga imasu ka.
部屋にだれがいますか。

Who is in the room?

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (location) + ni

Sono hon'ya **wa** Kanda **ni** arimasu.
その本屋は神田にあります。

The bookstore is in Kanda.

Ginkō **wa** doko **ni** arimasu ka.
銀行はどこにありますか。

Where is the bank?

Oda-san **wa** kaigishitsu **ni** imasu.
小田さんは会議室にいます。

Mr. Oda is in the conference room.

Tanaka-san **wa** doko **ni** imasu ka.
田中さんはどこにいますか。

Where is Miss Tanaka?

の no (l)

Used between two nouns, indicates
possession, location, or a modifying
phrase.

Pronoun/noun + no

Kore **wa** watashi **no** jisho desu.
これは私の辞書です。

This is my dictionary.

Sore **wa** dare **no** kasa desu ka.
それはだれのかさですか。

Whose umbrella is that?

Tanaka-san **no** desu.
田中さんのです。

It's Miss Tanaka's.

Note: If the context is clear, the

second noun can be omitted.

Noun + no + noun (location)

Tsukue **no** ue ni hako ga aru.

机の上に箱がある。

There is a box on the desk.

Heya **no** naka ni hito ga iru.

部屋の中に人がいる。

There are people inside the room.

Gakkō **no** ushiro ni kōen ga aru.

学校の後ろに公園がある。

There is a park behind the school.

Hanaya wa hon'ya **no** migi ni aru.

花屋は本屋の右にある。

The flower shop is to the right of the bookstore.

Noun (modifier) + no + noun

Tomu wa Nihongo **no** gakusei da.

トムは日本語の学生だ。

Tom is a student of Japanese.

eiga **no** kippu

映画の切符

a movie ticket

nikai **no** kyōshitsu

二階の教室

a classroom on the second floor

Ginza **no** resutoran

銀座のレストラン

a restaurant in Ginza

Indicates contrast between two items. The second item may be omitted when the contrasting element is implicit.

wa (2) は

6

Noun + wa ... Noun (contrast) + wa

Kanji **wa** muzukashii. Hiragana **wa** yasashii.

漢字は難しい。ひらがなは易しい。

Kanji is difficult. Hiragana is easy.

Tomu **wa** oyogimashita.

トムは泳きました。

Tom swam (but I didn't).

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (contrast) + wa

Gakusei wa kyō **wa** kimasen.

学生は今日は来ません。

As for the students, they don't come today (but will tomorrow).

Doyōbi wa Oda-san **wa** hataraki-masen.

土曜日は小田さんは働きません。

As for Saturdays, Mr. Oda doesn't work (but I do).

Note: Wa is pronounced with stress when the second item is omitted.

Double particles ni wa

Koko ni (wa) zasshi ga arimasu.

Asoko **ni** **wa** jisho ga arimasu.

ここに (は) 雑誌があります。

あそこには辞書があります。

There are magazines here.

There are dictionaries over there.

Yamada-sensei wa kyōshitsu **ni** **wa**

imasen.

山田先生は教室にはいません。

Prof. Yamada isn't in the classroom (but somewhere else).

Exercise 2 (4-6): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put wa, ga, or ni in the blanks

1. Ano kado _____ hanaya _____ arimasu.

あの角 _____ 花屋 _____ あります。

There is a flower shop at that corner.

2. Kōen _____ tori _____ imasu.

公園 _____ 鳥 _____ います。

There are birds in the park.

3. Heya _____ dare _____ imasu ka. Gakusei _____ imasu.

部屋 _____ だれ _____ いますか。学生 _____ います。

Who is in the room? A student is.

4. Sono hon'ya _____ doko _____ arimasu ka. Kanda _____ arimasu.

その本屋 _____ どこ _____ ありますか。神田 _____ あります。

Where is the bookstore? It's in Kanda.

5. Kaigishitsu _____ hito _____ imasu.

会議室 _____ 人 _____ います。

There are people in the conference room.

6. Asoko _____ nani _____ arimasu ka. Tsukue _____ arimasu.

あそこ _____ 何 _____ ありますか。机 _____ あります。

What are there over there? There are desks.

B. Review. Use any of the particles you have studied.

1. Tsukue _____ shita _____ nani _____ arimasu ka.

机 _____ 下 _____ 何 _____ ありますか。

What is under the desk?

2. Tanaka-san _____ doko _____ imasu ka. Nikai _____ heya _____ imasu.

田中さん _____ どこ _____ いますか。二階 _____ 部屋 _____ います。

Where is Mr. Tanaka? He is in the room on the second floor.

3. Kore _____ anata _____ jisho desu ka. Iie, Wada-san _____ desu.

これ _____ あなた _____ 辞書ですか。いいえ、和田さん _____ です。

Is this your dictionary? No, it's Mr. Wada's.

4. Ginkō _____ ano biru _____ ushiro _____ arimasu.

銀行 _____ あのビル _____ 後ろ _____ あります。

The bank is behind that building.

5. Kōen _____ ike _____ sakana _____ imasu.

公園 _____ 池 _____ 魚 _____ います。

There are fish in the pond in the park.

6. Yamada-san _____ kasa _____ dore desu ka.

山田さん _____ かさ _____ どれですか。

Which one is Miss Yamada's umbrella?

7. Kono hon _____ yasashii desu. Sono hon _____ muzukashii desu.

この本 _____ 易しいです。その本 _____ 難しいです。

This book is easy. That one is difficult.

8. Kono kata _____ watashi-tachi _____ Nihongo _____ sensei desu.

この方 _____ 私達 _____ 日本語 _____ 先生です。

This person (not that one) is our teacher of Japanese.

9. Oda-san _____ ashita _____ hatarakimasen.

小田さん _____ 明日 _____ 働きません。

As for Mr. Oda, he won't work tomorrow (but will next week).

10. Gakkō _____ mae _____ kōen _____ kodomo _____ imasu.

学校 _____ 前 _____ 公園 _____ 子供 _____ います。

There are children in the park in front of the school.

11. Eiga _____ zasshi _____ tsukue _____ ue _____ arimasen.

映画 _____ 雑誌 _____ 机 _____ 上 _____ ありません。

The movie magazine isn't on the desk (but somewhere else).

12. Hon'ya _____ migi _____ ginkō _____ aru. Hidari _____ hanaya _____ aru.

本屋 _____ 右 _____ 銀行 _____ ある。左 _____ 花屋 _____ ある。

There's a bank on the right of the bookstore. A flower shop is on the left.

に ni (2)

Indicates time and frequency.

Noun (time) + ni

Ichiji ni kite kudasai.

一時に来て下さい。

Please come at one o'clock.

Nanji ni okimasu ka.

何時に起きますか。

What time do you get up?

Getsuyōbi ni aimashō.

月曜日に会いましょう。

Let's meet on Monday.

Kotoshi no nigatsu ni kekkon shita.

今年の二月に結婚した。

I married in February of this year.

Natsu (ni) oyogimasu.

夏 (に) 泳ぎます。

We swim in the summer.

Note: Ni is optional with the four seasons. The following time expressions do not take ni, because they do not pinpoint the time:

asa 朝 morning

kyō 今日 today

kinō 昨日 yesterday

asu/ashita 明日 tomorrow

senshū 先週 last week

raigetsu 来月 next month

kyōnen 去年 last year

ichijikan 一時間 one hour

itsu いつ when

Noun (duration) + ni + noun (frequency)

Isshukan ni nido oyogimasu.

一週間に二度泳ぎます。

I swim twice a week.

Kono mise wa ikkagetsu ni sando yasumimasu.

この店は一か月に三度休みます。

The store closes three times a month.

Noun (duration) + oki ni

Densha wa juppun oki ni demasu.

電車は十分おきに出ます。

The train leaves every ten minutes.

Kare wa ichinichi oki ni kuru.

彼は一日おきに来る。

He comes every other day.

Noun (place) + e

Yamada-san wa Tōkyō e itta.
山田さんは東京へ行つた。

Mrs. Yamada went to Tokyo.

Gakusei wa soto e demashita.
学生は外へ出ました。

The students went outside.

Kare wa doko e ikimasu ka.
彼はどこへ行きますか。

Where is he going?

Kyōto e iku basu wa niji ni deru.
京都へ行くバスは二時に出る。

The bus going to Kyoto leaves at
two o'clock.

Double particles e no, e wa

Kore wa buchō e no tegami desu.
これは部長への手紙です。

This is a letter to the department head.

Ginkō e (wa) itta.
Yūbinkyoku e wa ikanakatta.

銀行へ（は）行つた。郵便局へは
行かなかつた。

I went to the bank. I didn't go to the
post office.

Noun (direct object) + o

Hachiji ni asagohan o tabemasu.
八時に朝ご飯を食べます。

I eat breakfast at eight o'clock.

Hara-san wa tegami o kaite imasu.
原さんは手紙を書いています。

Miss Hara is writing a letter.

Kinō nani o kaimashita ka.
昨日何を買いましたか。

What did you buy yesterday?

Noun (contrasted object / topic) + wa (not o)

Wain wa nomu. Sake wa nomanai.

ワインは飲む。酒は飲まない。

I drink wine. I don't drink sake.

Kanojo wa tenisu wa shimasu.

彼女はテニスはします。

She plays tennis (not golf).

Sono shinbun wa mō yomimashita.

その新聞はもう読みました。

As for that newspaper, I have read it.

Exercise 3 (7–9): Follow the instructions below.

A. Use ni or X (to indicate no particle is required).

1. Anata wa ashita _____ nanji _____ ikimasu ka.

あなたは明日 _____ 何時 _____ 行きますか。

What time are you going tomorrow?

2. Kanojo wa kyōnen no natsu _____ kekkon shita.

彼女は去年の夏 _____ 結婚した。

She married in the summer of last year.

3. Oda-san wa itsu _____ kimasu ka. Raishū no getsuyōbi _____ kimasu.

小田さんはいつ _____ 来ますか。来週の月曜日 _____ 来ます。

When is Miss Oda coming? She's coming on Monday next week.

4. Kinō _____ ichijikan _____ hatarakimashita.

昨日 _____ 一時間 _____ 働きました。

Yesterday I worked one hour.

5. Asa _____ nanji _____ okimasu ka.

朝 _____ 何時 _____ 起きますか。

What time do you get up in the morning?

6. Isshūkan _____ nido _____ kanji no kuizu ga aru.

一週間 _____ 二度 _____ 漢字のクイズがある。

We have kanji quizzes twice a week.

7. Tomu wa natsu _____ ichinichi oki _____ oyogimasu.

トムは夏 _____ 一日おき _____ 泳ぎます。

Tom swims every other day in summer.

B. Review. Use any of the particles you have studied.

1. Yamada-san _____ doko _____ ikimashita ka.

山田さん _____ どこ _____ 行きましたか。

Where did Mr. Yamada go?

2. Ashita _____ Ginza _____ resutoran _____ ikimashō.

明日 _____ 銀座 _____ レストラン _____ 行きましょう。

Let's go to a restaurant in Ginza tomorrow.

3. Doyōbi ____ jisho ____ kaimashita.

土曜日 ____ 辞書 ____ 買いました。

I bought a dictionary on Saturday.

4. Nani ____ yonde imasu ka. Nihongo ____ shinbun ____ yonde imasu.

何 ____ 読んでいますか。日本語 ____ 新聞 ____ 読んでいます。

What are you reading? I'm reading a Japanese newspaper.

5. Sono tegami ____ kinō ____ kakimashita.

その手紙 ____ 昨日 ____ 書きました。

As for the letter, I wrote it yesterday.

6. Oda-san ____ tenisu ____ shimasu. Gorufu ____ shimasen.

小田さん ____ テニス ____ します。ゴルフ ____ しません。

Miss Oda plays tennis. She doesn't play golf.

7. Nanji ____ asagohan ____ tabemasu ka. Hachiji ____ tabemasu.

何時 ____ 朝ご飯 ____ 食べますか。八時 ____ 食べます。

What time do you eat breakfast? I eat at eight o'clock.

8. Gakkō ____ hon'ya ____ itta. Kanda ____ hon'ya ____ ikanakatta.

学校 ____ 本屋 ____ 行った。神田 ____ 本屋 ____ 行かなかつた。

I did go to the school bookstore. Didn't go to the one in Kanda.

9. Shinjuku ____ iku basu ____ juppun oki ____ demasu.

新宿 ____ 行くバス ____ 十分おき ____ 出ます。

The bus going to Shinjuku leaves every ten minutes.

10. Tanaka-sensei ____ purezento ____ senshū ____ kaimashita.

田中先生 ____ プレゼント ____ 先週 ____ 買いました。

We bought the present to Prof. Tanaka last week.

と **to (ト)**

Joins two or more nouns to indicate a complete list of items.

Noun + to + noun

Oda-san **to** Hara-san wa enginia desu.

小田さんと原さんはエンジニアです。

Mr. Oda and Mr. Hara are engineers.

Asoko ni isu **to** tēburu ga arimasu.

あそこにいすとテーブルがあります。

There are chairs and tables over there.

Tomu **to** Biru ga hanashite imasu.

トムとビルが話しています。

Tom and Bill are talking.

Ringo **to** orenji o kaimashita.

りんごとオレンジを買いました。

I bought apples and oranges.

Kinyōbi **to** doyōbi ni gorufu o shimasu.

金曜日と土曜日にゴルフをします。

I play golf on Friday and Saturday.

Kyō **to** ashita wa isogashii.

今日と明日は忙しい。

Today and tomorrow, I am busy.

や **ya (ヤ)**

Joins two or more nouns to indicate a partial list of items.

Noun + ya + noun

Biru **ya** Jon ga tenisu o shite iru.

ビルやジョンがテニスをしている。

Bill, John (and others) are playing tennis.

Kare wa Doitsugo **ya** Furansugo o hanasu.

彼はドイツ語やフランス語を話す。

He speaks German, French (and other languages).

E **ya** chōkoku o mimashita.

絵や彫刻を見ました。

I saw paintings, sculptures (and the like).

Kyōto **ya** Nara e ikimashita.

京都や奈良へ行きました。

We went to Kyoto, Nara (and elsewhere).

Noun + ya + Noun + nado
(wa, ga, or o may be omitted)

Sara ya Jun **nado** (wa) oyogimashita.

サラやジュンなど（は）泳ぎました。

Sarah, June (and others) swam.

Toshokan ni hon ya zasshi **nado** (ga) aru.

図書館に本や雑誌など（が）ある。

There are books and magazines (among other things) in the library.

Chiri ya rekishi **nado** (o) benkyō shimasu.

地理や歴史など（を）勉強します。

I study geography, history (and so forth).

Double particle nado e

Depāto ya sūpā **nado e** itta.

デパートやスーパーなどへ行つた。

I went to a department store, a supermarket (and other places).

Exercise 4 (10-12): Put appropriate particles or X (no particle) in the blanks.

1. Eiga _____ zasshi _____ shinbun _____ kaimashita.

映画 _____ 雑誌 _____ 新聞 _____ 買いました。

I bought a movie magazine and a newspaper.

2. Hako _____ naka _____ ringo _____ orenji _____ ga arimasu.

箱 _____ 中 _____ りんご _____ オレンジ _____ があります。

There are apples, oranges (among other things) in the box.

3. Buchō _____ Yamada-san wa kaigishitsu _____ imasu.

部長 _____ 山田さんは会議室 _____ います。

The department head and Mr. Yamada are in the conference room.

4. Tomu _____ Jimu wa kyōnen no rokugatsu _____ Nihon _____ kimashita.

トム _____ ジムは去年の六月 _____ 日本 _____ 来ました。

Tom and Jim came to Japan in June last year.

5. Jimu wa isshūkan _____ nido _____ sushi _____ tenpura _____ tabemasu.

ジムは一週間 _____ 二度 _____ すし _____ てんぷら _____ 食べます。

Jim eats sushi, tempura and so forth twice a week.

6. Natsu _____ umi _____ yama _____ ikimasu.

夏 _____ 海 _____ 山 _____ 行きます。

In summer I go to the mountains, the sea, and so forth.

7. Rekishi _____ hon _____ Doitsugo _____ jisho _____ wa tsukue _____ ue _____ arimasu.

歴史 _____ 本 _____ ドイツ語 _____ 辞書 _____ は机 _____ 上 _____ あります。

The history books, German dictionaries, etc., are on the desk.

8. Watashi _____ kaisha _____ mae _____ resutoran _____ hanaya ga arimasu.

私 _____ 会社 _____ 前 _____ レストラン _____ 花屋があります。

There are a restaurant, a flower shop, etc., in front of my company.

9. Nihon _____ chiri _____ rekishi _____ benkyō shite imasu.

日本 _____ 地理 _____ 歴史 _____ 勉強しています。

I'm studying Japanese history and geography.

10. Doyōbi _____ nichiyōbi _____ toshokan _____ ikimasu.

土曜日 _____ 日曜日 _____ 図書館 _____ 行きます。

I go to the library on Saturday and Sunday.

11. Kyō _____ ashita _____ isogashii desu. Raishū _____ kite kudasai.

今日 _____ 明日 _____ 忙しいです。来週 _____ 来て下さい。

I'm busy today and tomorrow. Please come next week.

12. E _____ chōkoku _____ mimashita ka. E _____ mimashita.

Chōkoku _____ mimasen deshita.

絵 _____ 彫刻 _____ 見ましたか。絵 _____ 見ました。彫刻 _____ 見ませんでした。

Did you see paintings and sculptures (among other things)? I did see paintings.

I didn't see sculptures.

Refers to the noun immediately preceding, and means "too," "also," or "either."

mo (1) も

13

Noun + mo (mo replaces wa, ga, o)

Chichi wa isha desu. Haha **mo** isha desu.

父は医者です。母も医者です。

My father is a doctor. My mother also is a doctor.

Eki no naka ni tokeiya ga aru.
Yakkyoku **mo** aru.

駅の中に時計屋がある。薬局もある。

There is a watch shop in the station.
A pharmacy, too.

Asoko ni otoko no hito ga iru. Onna no hito **mo** iru.

あそこに男の人がいる。女の人もいる。

There are men over there. Women, too.

Terebi o minai. Rajio **mo** kikanai.

テレビを見ない。ラジオも聞かない。

I don't watch TV. I don't listen to the radio, either.

Used repeatedly meaning "both...and..." or "neither...nor..."

mo (2) も

14

Noun + mo + noun + mo + positive v.

Tomu **mo** Biru **mo** Nihongo o hanasuu.

トムもビルも日本語を話す。

Both Tom and Bill speak Japanese.

Double particle e mo, ni mo

Yama e iku. Umi **e** **mo** iku.

山へ行く。海へも行く。

I go to the mountains. I go to the sea, too.

Hon wa koko ni wa nai. Asoko **ni** **mo** nai.

本はここにはない。あそこにもない。

The book isn't here. It isn't there, either.

Wada-san wa kyōshitsu ni wa imasen.
Toshokan **ni** **mo** imasen.

和田さんは教室にはいません。図書館にもいません。

Miss Wada is not in the classroom. She isn't in the library, either.

Mise ni wa takai mono **mo** yasui mono **mo** aru.

店には高い物も安い物もある。

In the store there are expensive things, and inexpensive things as well.

Noun/adj-ku + mo + noun/adj-ku + mo + negative verb

Kare wa tenisu **mo** gorufu **mo** shinai.
彼はテニスもゴルフもしない。
He plays neither tennis nor golf.

Kono heyā wa hiroku **mo** semaku
mo nai.
この部屋は広くも狭くもない。
This room is neither big nor small.

Double particles ni mo, e mo

Natsu **ni** **mo** fuyu **ni** **mo** yama e
ikimasu.

夏にも冬にも山へ行きます。
I go to the mountains both in summer
and winter.

Ginza **e** **mo** Ueno **e** **mo** ikanakatta.
銀座へも上野へも行かなかった。
I went neither to Ginza nor to Ueno.

15

に ni (3)

Indicates the indirect object of a verb.

Noun (indirect object) + ni

Watashi wa ane **ni** tegami o kaita.
私は姉に手紙を書いた。
I wrote a letter to my older sister.

Imōto wa Amerikajin **ni** Nihongo o
oshiete iru.
妹はアメリカ人に日本語を教えている。
My younger sister is teaching Japanese
to Americans.

Ato de tomodachi **ni** denwa shimasu.
後で友達に電話します。
I'll phone my friend later.

Double particles ni mo, ni wa

Sara **ni** **mo** kono shashin o misete
kudasi.
サラにもこの写真を見せて下さい。
Show this photo to Sarah, too.

Tomu **ni** (wa) hanashita. Jimu **ni** **wa**
hanasanakatta.
トムに（は）話した。ジムには話さなか
った。
I told Tom. I didn't tell Jim.

Exercise 5 (13-15): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put to or mo in the blanks.

1. Ane _____ imōto _____ Tōkyō ni imasu.

姉 _____ 妹 _____ 東京にいます。

Both my older sister and younger sister are in Tokyo.

2. Tomu _____ Jimu wa Nihongo o benkyō shite imasu.

トム _____ ジムは日本語を勉強しています。

Tom and Jim are studying Japanese.

3. Wada-san wa wain _____ sake _____ nomimasen.

和田さんはワイン _____ 酒 _____ 飲みません。

Miss Wada drinks neither wine nor sake.

4. Hon _____ zasshi _____ shinbun o kaimashita.

本 _____ 雑誌 _____ 新聞を買いました。

I bought a book, a magazine, and newspapers.

5. Yamada-san _____ Wada-san _____ Tanaka-san ga kimashita.

山田さん _____ 和田さん _____ 田中さんが来ました。

Mr. Yamada, Miss Wada, and Mrs. Tanaka came.

6. Koko ni wa tokueya _____ yakkyoku _____ arimasen.

ここには時計屋 _____ 薬局 _____ ありません。

There is neither a watch shop nor a pharmacy in here.

7. Sumisu-san wa Doitsugo _____ Furansugo _____ hanashimasu.

スマスさんはドイツ語 _____ フランス語 _____ 話します。

Mr. Smith speaks both German and French.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Watashi _____ tomodachi _____ gakkō _____ sensei desu.

私 _____ 友達 _____ 学校 _____ 先生です。

My friend is a schoolteacher, too.

2. Ano otoko _____ hito wa isha de wa nai. Ano onna _____ hito _____ isha de wa nai.

あの男 _____ 人は医者ではない。あの女 _____ 人 _____ 医者ではない。

That man isn't a doctor. That woman isn't a doctor, either.

3. Asoko _____ hanaya _____ arimasu. Eki _____ naka _____ arimasu.

あそこ _____ 花屋 _____ あります。駅 _____ 中 _____ あります。

There is a flower shop over there. In the station, too.

4. Sono tokeiya wa kono biru _____ naka _____ mae _____ arimasen.

その時計屋はこのビル _____ 中 _____ 前 _____ ありません。

The watch shop is neither in nor in front of this building.

5. Kyonon no hachigatsu _____ umi _____ itta. Yama _____ itta.

去年の八月 _____ 海 _____ 行った。山 _____ 行った。

We went to the sea in August last year. We went to the mountains too.

6. Kono resutoran _____ takaku _____ yasuku _____ nai.

このレストラン _____ 高く _____ 安く _____ ない。

This restaurant is neither expensive nor inexpensive.

7. Kinō Bosuton _____ tomodachi _____ tegami _____ kaita.

昨日ボストン _____ 友達 _____ 手紙 _____ 書いた。

I wrote a letter to my friend in Boston yesterday.

8. Sensei wa gakusei _____ shashin _____ misete imasu.

先生は学生 _____ 写真 _____ 見せています。

The teacher is showing some photos to his students.

9. Ane wa isshūkan _____ nido Amerikajin no kodomo _____

Nihongo _____ oshiemasu.

姉は一週間 _____ 二度アメリカ人の子供 _____ 日本語 _____ 教えます。

My older sister teaches Japanese to American children twice a week.

10. Oda-san _____ Yamada-san _____ denwa shimashita.

小田さん _____ 山田さん _____ 電話しました。

I phoned both Mr. Oda and Miss Yamada.

11. Sono koto _____ chichi _____ hanashita. Haha _____ hanasanakatta.

その事 _____ 父 _____ 話した。母 _____ 話さなかった。

As for that matter, I told my father. I didn't tell my mother.

Indicates the surface of something on which a certain action takes place.

ni (4)

に

16

Noun + ni

Gakusei ga kokuban **ni** kanji o kaite imasu.

学生が黒板に漢字を書いています。

A student is writing kanji on the blackboard.

Kono kami **ni** anata no nmae o kaite kudasai.

この紙にあなたの名前を書いて下さい。

Please write your name on this paper.

Kōto wa hangā **ni** kakete kudasai.

コートはハンガーにかけて下さい。

Please hang your coat on the hanger.

Double particles ni mo, ni wa

Ano kabe **ni mo** e ga hatte aru.

あの壁にも絵がはってある。

A picture is affixed to that wall, too.

Hako wa koko **ni** oite kudasai. Tsukue no ue **ni wa** okanaide kudasai.

箱はここに置いて下さい。机の上には置かないで下さい。

Please put the boxes here. Don't put them on the desk.

Indicates the location of an action.

de (1) で

17

Noun (location) + de + action verb.

Gakusei wa kōdō **de** kōgi o kiite imasu.

学生は講堂で講義を聞いています。

The students are listening to the lecture in the auditorium.

Neko ga tēburu no ue **de** asonde iru.

猫がテーブルの上で遊んでいる。

A cat is playing on the table.

Kono koppu wa supā **de/ni** utte imasu.

このコップはスーパーで・に売っています。

This cup is sold at the supermarket.

Note: In some cases, either de or ni can be used. When de is used, emphasis is put on the action, while when ni is used, emphasis is on the existence.

Noun (location) + de + aru (with an event)

Kōdō **de** eiga ga arimasu.
講堂で映画があります。
There will be a movie in the auditorium.

Kinō kōen **de** pikunikkku ga arimashita.
昨日公園でピクニックがありました。
There was a picnic in the park yesterday.

Double particles de mo, de wa

Tomu wa uchi **de mo** yoku benkyō shimasu.
トムはうちでもよく勉強します。
Tom studies hard at home, as well.

Kare wa bā **de wa** nomimasen.
彼はバーでは飲みません。
He doesn't drink at a bar (though he does at home).

18

と to (2)

Indicates a person with whom an action is performed. Often used with "issho ni" (together).

Noun + to

Watashi wa ani **to** tenisu o shita.
私は兄とテニスをした。
I played tennis with my older brother.

Kodomo **to** issho ni kōen e itta.
子供と一緒に公園へ行った。
I went to the park with children.

Ane wa Amerikajin **to** kekkon shita.
姉はアメリカ人と結婚した。
My older sister married an American.

Watashi wa otōto **to** kenka shita.
私は弟とけんかした。
I quarreled with my younger brother.

Double particles to no, to wa

Kare **to no** yakusoku o wasureta.
彼との約束を忘れた。
I forgot the promise I made to him.

Sensei **to no** kaiwa o tanoshinda.
先生との会話を楽しんだ。
I enjoyed the conversation with my teacher.

Kyō Jimu **to** atta. Biru **to wa** awanakatta.
今日ジムと会った。ビルとは会わなかった。
I met Jim today. I did not meet Bill.

Note: To and to wa may be replaced by ni and ni wa.

Noun + no + noun

Ano hito wa shachō **no** Miki-san desu.

あの人は社長の三木さんです。

That person is Mr. Miki, president of the company.

Bengoshi **no** Hara-san ga matte imasu.

弁護士の原さんが待っています。

Mr. Hara, a lawyer, is waiting.

Otōto **no** Akira to dōbutsuen e itta.

弟の明と動物園へ行つた。

I went to the zoo with Akira, my younger brother.

Tomodachi **no** Mishiko-san to tenisu o shita.

友達のみち子さんとテニスをした。

I play tennis with my friend Michiko.

Exercise 6 (16–19): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put ni or de in the blanks.

1. Toshokan _____ benkyō shimasu.

図書館 _____ 勉強します。

I study in the library.

2. Asoko _____ hon'ya ga arimasu. Asoko _____ matte ite kudasai.

あそこ _____ 本屋があります。あそこ _____ 待っていて下さい。

There is a bookstore over there. Please be waiting there.

3. Sono tsukue wa koko _____ oite kudasai.

その机はここ _____ 置いて下さい。

As for that desk, please put it here.

4. Kodomo ga soto _____ asonde imasu.

子供が外 _____ 遊んでいます。

Children are playing outside.

5. Kōdō _____ isu ga arimasu. Asoko _____ kōgi ga arimasu.

講堂 _____ いすがあります。あそこ _____ 講義があります。

There are chairs in the auditorium. We have lectures there.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks. Use X to indicate no particle is required.

1. Kyōshitsu _____ gakusei _____ imasu. Gakusei _____ kabe _____ e _____ hatte imasu.

教室 _____ 学生 _____ います。学生 _____ 壁 _____ 絵 _____ はっています。

There are students in the classroom. They are putting pictures on the wall.

2. Kanojo wa toshokan _____ hon _____ yomimasu. Densha _____ naka _____ yomimasu.

彼女は図書館 _____ 本 _____ 読みます。電車 _____ 中 _____ 読みます。

She reads books in the library. She reads on the train, too.

3. Kinō sensei _____ ichijikan _____ hanashita.

昨日先生 _____ 一時間 _____ 話した。

Yesterday I talked with my teacher for one hour.

4. Otōto _____ Akira _____ kōen _____ asonda.

弟 _____ 明 _____ 公園 _____ 遊んだ。

I played with my younger brother Akira in the park.

5. Watashi wa pūru _____ oyogimasu. Umi _____ oyogimesen.

私はプール _____ 泳ぎます。海 _____ 泳ぎません。

I swim in the swimming pool. I don't swim in the ocean.

6. Kare wa buchō _____ Tanaka-san _____ kaigishitsu _____ hanashite iru.

彼は部長 _____ 田中さん _____ 会議室 _____ 話している。

He is talking with Mr. Tanaka, the department head, in the conference room.

7. Tēburu _____ shita _____ hako ga aru. Hako _____ raberu _____ hatte aru.

テーブル _____ 下 _____ 箱がある。箱 _____ ラベル _____ はつてある。

There is a box under the table. A label is affixed on the box.

8. Kinyōbi _____ bengoshi _____ Oda-san _____ yakusoku ga arimasu.

金曜日 _____ 弁護士 _____ 小田さん _____ 約束があります。

I have an appointment with Mr. Oda, my lawyer, on Friday.

9. Haiue _____ jiko _____ atta. Ginkō _____ mae _____ atta.

ハイウェー _____ 事故 _____ あった。銀行 _____ 前 _____ あった。

There was an accident on the highway. There was one in front of the bank, too.

10. Dono hito _____ Nihongo _____ sensei _____ Wada-san desu ka.

どの人 _____ 日本語 _____ 先生 _____ 和田さんですか。

Which person is Mr. Wada, a teacher of Japanese?

indicates a starting point in time or place.

kara (カ) から

20

Noun (time/location) + kara

Kaisha wa kuji **kara** hajimaru.

会社は九時から始まる。

(Work at) the company begins at nine o'clock.

Ano fune wa gaikoku **kara** kita.

あの船は外国から来た。

That ship came from a foreign country.

Double particles kara no, kara mo

Kaisha **kara no** henji wa mada kimasen.

会社からの返事はまだ来ません。

The reply from the company has not come yet.

Kanada **kara mo** gakusei ga kuru.

カナダからも学生が来る。

Students come from Canada, too.

Meaning as **kara**(I) above, but more formal,
and often used in writing.

yori (ヨリ) より

21

Noun (time) + yori

Kaigi wa niji **yori** okonawareru.

会議は二時より行なわれる。

The meeting will be held from two o'clock.

Tenrankai wa mikka **yori** kaisai sareru.

展覧会は三日より開催される。

The exhibition will be held from the third.

Noun (location) + yori

Kono michi **yori** mukō ga Kita-ku desu.

この道より向こうが北区です。

From this road on is Kita Ward.

Ōsaka-yuki wa niban hōmu **yori** hassha shimasu.

大阪行きは二番ホームより発車します。

The train bound for Osaka leaves from platform No. 2.

まで made (I)

Indicates a limit on time, space, or quantity.

Noun (time/space/quantity) + made

Yūbe jūji **made** benkyō shita.
昨夜十時まで勉強した。

I studied until ten last night.

Asa kara ban **made** piano o hiite iru.
朝から晩までピアノを弾いています。

She plays the piano from morning till night.

Ie kara gakkō **made** arukimasu.
家から学校まで歩きます。

I walk from my house to the school.

Kono kuruma wa gonin **made** noreru.
この車は五人まで乗れる。

This car can take up to five people.

Double particles made no, made ni

Meguro **made no** kippu o kaimashita.
目黒までの切符を買いました。

I bought a ticket to Meguro.

Yūshoku **made ni** kaerimasu.
夕食までに帰ります。

I'll return by supper.

Raisyū no suiyōbi **made ni** kite kudasai.
来週の水曜日までに来てください。

Please come before next Wednesday.

Exercise 7 (20–22): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kodomo-tachi _____ issho ni dōbutsuen _____ arukimashita.

子供達 _____ 一緒に動物園 _____ 歩きました。

I walked to the zoo with children.

2. Sono tegami _____ doko _____ kimashita ka.

その手紙 _____ どこ _____ 来ましたか。

Where did that letter come from?

3. Konsāto _____ suiyōbi _____ gogo rokuji _____ hajimaru.

コンサート _____ 水曜日 _____ 午後六時 _____ 始まる。

The concert begins at six p.m. on Wednesday.

4. Nihon _____ Furansu _____ Doitsu _____ gakusei ga kimasu.

日本 _____ フランス _____ ドイツ _____ 学生が来ます。

Students come to Japan from France, Germany (and other places as well).

5. Tōkyō-eki _____ Ōsaka _____ kippu _____ kaimashita.

東京駅 _____ 大阪 _____ 切符 _____ 買いました。

I bought a ticket to Osaka at Tokyo station.

6. Kore wa bengoshi _____ Wada-san _____ henji desu.

これは弁護士 _____ 和田さん _____ 返事です。

This is the reply from Mr. Wada, my lawyer.

7. Yūbe kuji _____ Tanaka-san _____ resutoran _____ hanashita.

昨夜九時 _____ 田中さん _____ レストラン _____ 話した。

I talked with Miss Tanaka until nine last night at the restaurant.

8. Kyōto-yuki warokuban hōmu _____ niji _____ hassha shimasu.

京都行きは六番ホーム _____ 二時 _____ 発車します。

The train bound for Kyoto leaves from platform No. 6 at two o'clock.

9. Tenrankai wa konshū _____ suiyōbi _____ raishū _____ kinyōbi _____ kaisai sareru.

展覧会は今週 _____ 水曜日 _____ 来週 _____ 金曜日 _____ 開催される。

The exhibition will be held from Wednesday of this week through Friday of next week.

10. Shachō wa raigetsu _____ mikka _____ Amerika _____ kaerimasu.

社長は来月 _____ 三日 _____ アメリカ _____ 帰ります。

The company president will return from America by the third of next month.

Indicates approximate amount (gurai is more colloquial).

kurai (I) く ら い

23

Number + kurai/gurai

Shiken wa nijikan **kurai** kakatta.

試験は二時間くらいかかった。

The examination took about two hours.

Tomu wa kanji o hyaku **gurai** shitte imasu.

トムは漢字を百ぐらい知っています。

Tom knows about a hundred kanji.

Interrogative word + kurai/gurai

Dono **kurai** machimashita ka.
どのくらい待ちましたか。
About how long did you wait?

Ikura **gurai** haraimashita ka.
いくらぐらい払いましたか。
About how much did you pay?

24

ほど hodo (！)

Indicates an approximate amount (replaceable by kurai/gurai).

Number + hodo

Ringo ga muttsu **hodo** nokotte imasu.
りんごが六つほど残っています。
About six apples are left.

Nōto o gosatsu **hodo** katta.
ノートを五冊ほど買った。
I bought about five notebooks.

Kuruma ga godai **hodo** tomatte iru.
車が五台ほど止まっている。
About five cars are parked.

Ikkagetsu **hodo** ryokō shimasu.
一か月程ほど旅行します。
I'll travel about a month.

25

ばかり bakari (！)

Indicates an approximate amount (replaceable by kurai/gurai or hodo).

Number + bakari

Ie ga goken **bakari** tatte imasu.
家が五軒ばかり建っています。
About five houses are being built.

Kare wa yonen **bakari** mae ni Nihon ni
sunde imashita.
彼は四年ばかり前に日本に住んでいました。
He lived in Japan about four years ago.

Mikka **bakari** hoteru ni tomatta.
三日ばかりホテルに泊まった。
I stayed at the hotel for about three days.

Noun + de

Fune **de** Hawai e ikimashita.
船でハワイへ行きました。

We went to Hawaii by boat.

Eigo **de** hanashite kudasai.
英語で話して下さい。

Please speak in English.

Hashi **de** tabemasu.
はしで食べます。

We eat with chopsticks.

Rajio **de** sono nyūsu o kiita.
ラジオでそのニュースを聞いた。

I heard the news on the radio.

Kami **de** ningyō o tsukurimasu.
紙で人形を作ります。

They make dolls with paper.

Double particles de mo, de wa

Basu **de** ikemasu. Densha **de mo** ikemasu.
バスで行けます。電車でも行けます。

You can go by bus. You can go by train, also.

Konna pen **de wa** kakenai.
こんなペンでは書けない。

I can't write with a pen like this.

Nihongo **de wa** hanasemasu.
Chūbokugo **de wa** hanasemasen.
日本語では話せます。中国語では話せません。

I can speak in Japanese. I can't speak in Chinese.

Exercise 8 (23–26): Put appropriate particles or X (no particle) in the blanks.

1. Kokuban _____ kanji _____ itsutsu _____ kaite arimasu.

黒板 _____ 漢字 _____ 五つ _____ 書いてあります。

About five kanji are written on the blackboard.

2. Heya _____ terebi _____ nijikan _____ mimashita.

部屋 _____ テレビ _____ 二時間 _____ 見ました。

I watched TV for about two hours in the room.

3. Kōdō _____ gakusei _____ jūnin _____ dete kimashita.

講堂 _____ 学生 _____ 十人 _____ 出てきました。

About ten students came out of the auditorium.

4. Biru _____ mae _____ kuruma ga nijūdai _____ tomatte iru.

ビル _____ 前 _____ 車が二十台 _____ 止まっている。

About twenty cars are parked in front of the building.

5. Hon _____ nisatsu _____ nōto _____ rokusatsu _____ kaimashita.

本 _____ 二冊 _____ ノート _____ 六冊 _____ 買いました。

I bought two books and about six notebooks.

6. Kanojo wa sannen _____ Amerikajin _____ Nihongo _____ oshietta.

彼女は三年 _____ アメリカ人 _____ 日本語 _____ 教えた。

She taught Japanese to Americans for about three years.

7. Ikkagetsu _____ nido _____ haha _____ denwa shimasu.

一か月 _____ 二度 _____ 母 _____ 電話します。

I phone my mother about twice a month.

8. Yūbe _____ terebi _____ nani _____ mimashita ka.

昨夜 _____ テレビ _____ 何 _____ 見ましたか。

What did you watch on TV last night?

9. Kodomo ga kami _____ hako _____ tsukutte imasu.

子供が紙 _____ 箱 _____ 作っています。

The children are making boxes with paper.

10. Tōkyō _____ Ōsaka _____ densha _____ sanjikan _____ kakaru.

東京 _____ 大阪 _____ 電車 _____ 三時間 _____ かかる。

From Tokyo to Osaka it takes about three hours by train.

11. Jimu wa fōku _____ naifu _____ tabemasu. Hashi _____ tabemasen.

ジムはフォーク _____ ナイフ _____ 食べます。はし _____ 食べません。

Jim eats with knife and fork. He doesn't eat with chopsticks.

12. Koko _____ Meguro _____ basu _____ dono _____ kakarimsu ka.

ここ _____ 目黒 _____ バス _____ どの _____ かかりますか。

How long does it take to get from here to Meguro by bus?

13. Rinda wa sensei _____ Nihongo _____ tegami _____ kakimashita.

リンダは先生 _____ 日本語 _____ 手紙 _____ 書きました。

Linda wrote a letter in Japanese to her teacher.

14. Buraun-san wa Eigo _____ supiichi _____ shita. Nihongo _____ shita.

ブラウンさんは英語 _____ スピーチ _____ した。日本語 _____ した。

Mr. Brown gave a speech in English. He made one in Japanese, too.

Indicates a choice or alternative.

ka (2) カ

27

Noun + ka + Noun

Hara-san **ka** Miki-san ga kuru deshō.

原さんか三木さんが来るでしょう。

Either Mr. Hara or Mr. Miki will come.

Sētā **ka** jaketto o kaimasu.

セーターかジャケットを買います。

I'll buy either a sweater or a jacket.

Densha **ka** basu de ikimasu.

電車かバスで行きます。

I'll go either by train or bus.

Sentence + ka ... sentence + ka

Anata ga ikimasu **ka**. Yamada-san ga ikimasu **ka**.

あなたが行きますか、山田さんが行きますか。

Are you going, or is Miss Yamada going?

Tsuzukemashō **ka**. Sukoshi yasumi mashō **ka**

続けましょうか。少し休みましょうか。

Shall we continue? Or take a short break?

Indicates a point of departure.

o (2) を

28

Noun (place) + o

Maiasa kuji ni ie **o** demasu.

毎朝九時に家を出ます。

I leave my house at nine o'clock every morning.

Ueno-eki de densha **o** orimashita.

上野駅で電車を降りました。

I got off the train at Ueno Station.

Kare wa rainen daigaku **o** sotsugyō suru.

彼は来年大学を卒業する。

He'll graduate from college next year.

Chichi wa sengetsu seikai **o** intai shita.

父は先月政界を引退した。

My father retired from the political world last month.

Noun (place/route) + o

Hiroi michi o arukimashita.
広い道を歩きました。

I walked along the wide road.

Hikōki ga sora o tonde iru.
飛行機が空を飛んでいる。

A plane is flying in the sky.

Kōen o tōrimashō ka.
公園を通りましょうか。

Shall we go through the park?

Ano kado o hidari e magatte kudasai.
あの角を左へ曲がって下さい。

Turn left at that corner.

Exercise 9 (27-29): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Ano hito wa isha desu _____, daigaku _____ sensei desu _____.

あの人は医者です _____、大学 _____ 先生です _____。

Is he a doctor or a college professor?

2. Rokuji _____ Tanaka-san _____ issho ni kaisha _____ demashita.

六時 _____ 田中さん _____ 一緒に会社 _____ 出ました。

I left the company with Miss Tanaka at six o'clock.

3. Kono kabe _____ e _____ posutā _____ hatte kudasai.

この壁 _____ 絵 _____ ポスター _____ はって下さい。

Put a picture or a poster on this wall, please.

4. Asa _____ ban _____ hikōki ga sora _____ tonde imasu.

朝 _____ 晩 _____ 飛行機が空 _____ 飛んでいます。

From morning till night, airplanes are flying in the sky.

5. Sono koto _____ suiyōbi _____ mokuyōbi _____ hanashimashō.

その事 _____ 水曜日 _____ 木曜日 _____ 話しましょう。

Regarding the matter, let's talk either on Wednesday or Thursday.

6. Kodomo ga gonin _____ gakkō _____ mae _____ basu _____ orita.

子供が五人 _____ 学校 _____ 前 _____ バス _____ 降りた。

About five children got off the bus in front of the school.

7. Sono jiko _____ terebi _____ mimashita ka, shinbun _____ yomimashita ka.

その事故 _____ テレビ _____ 見ましたか、新聞 _____ 読みましたか。

Did you see the accident on TV, or did you read about it in a newspaper?

8. Takushii _____ ikimashō ka, kono michi _____ cki _____ arukimashō ka.

タクシー _____ 行きましょうか、この道 _____ 駅 _____ 歩きましょうか。

Shall we go by taxi, or shall we walk along this street to the station?

9. Ano kado _____ migi e magatte, ginkō _____ mae _____ tomete kudasai.

あの角 _____ 右へ曲がって、銀行 _____ 前 _____ 止めて下さい。

Turn right at that corner and stop in front of the bank.

10. Wada-san wa rainen _____ sangatsu _____ shigatsu _____ seikai _____ intai shimasu.

和田さんは来年 _____ 三月 _____ 四月 _____ 政界 _____ 引退します。

Mr. Wada will retire from the political world either in March or April of next year.

Indicates a point of arrival.

ni (5)

に

30

Noun (place) + ni

Densha ga eki ni tsukimashita.

電車が駅に着きました。

A train arrived at the station.

Watashi-tachi wa yūbe hoteru ni tsukimashita.

私たちは昨日ホテルに着きました。

We arrived at the hotel last night.

Fune wa itsu minato ni tsukimasu ka.

船はいつ港に着きますか。

When will the ship arrive at the port?

Hikōki wa dono gēto ni tsukimasu ka.

飛行機はどのゲートに着きますか。

Which gate does the plane arrive at?

に ni (6)

Indicates an entering motion.

Noun (place) + ni

Shinjuku de densha **ni** norimashita.

新宿で電車に乗りました。

I got on a train at Shinjuku.

Kare wa tenisu kurabu **ni** haitte iru.

彼はテニスクラブに入っている。

He has joined the tennis club.

Maiban o-furo **ni** hairimasu.

毎晩お風呂に入ります。

I take a bath (get into the bath) every night.

に ni (7)

Indicates purpose when used with a motion verb that expresses a movement from one place to another.

Noun (activity) + ni + motion verb

Ashita kaimono **ni** ikimasu.

明日買物に行きます。

I'll go shopping tomorrow.

V(-masu) + ni + motion verb

Ringo o kai **ni** mises ni haitta.

りんごを買いに店に入った。

I went into a store to buy apples.

Konban shokuji **ni** ikimashō.

今晚食事に行きましょう。

Let's go out for dinner tonight.

Ginza e eiga o mi **ni** itta.

銀座へ映画を見に行った。

I went to Ginza to see a movie.

Ōzei no hito ga kenbutsu **ni** kita.

大勢の人が見物に来た。

Many people came for sightseeing.

Nani o shi **ni** kimashita ka.

何をしに来ましたか。

Why did you come?

Exercise 10 (30-32): Follow the instructions below.

A. Translate the following phrases into Japanese.

1. to arrive at Kyoto at two o'clock
2. to arrive at Hong Kong by Monday
3. to get on a train at Ueno
4. to join the judo club
5. to go out for dinner
6. to come to play golf
7. to enter a store to buy a book

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Gogo sanji _____ yama _____ ue _____ hoteru _____ tsukimashita.

午後三時 _____ 山 _____ 上 _____ ホテル _____ 着きました。

We arrived at the hotel on the top of the mountain at three p.m.

2. Ano kado _____ Ueno-yuki _____ basu _____ notte kudasai.

あの角 _____ 上野行き _____ バス _____ 乗って下さい。

Please get on the bus for Ueno at that corner.

3. Tomodachi _____ umi _____ oyogi _____ ikimashita.

友達 _____ 海 _____ 泳ぎ _____ 行きました。

I went swimming to the sea with my friends.

4. Honkon _____ hikōki wa rokuji _____ goban gēto _____ tsukimasu.

香港 _____ 飛行機は六時 _____ 五番ゲート _____ 着きます。

The plane from Hong Kong will arrive at gate five at six o'clock.

5. Zasshi _____ kai _____ Ginza _____ mise _____ haitta.

雑誌 _____ 買い _____ 銀座 _____ 店 _____ 入った。

I entered a store in Ginza to buy a magazine.

6. Tomu _____ Jimu _____ jūdō kurabu _____ haitte imasu.

トム _____ ジム _____ 柔道クラブ _____ 入っています。

Both Tom and Jim are members of the judo club.

7. Kono tegami wa kinyōbi _____ mukō _____ tsukudeshō.

この手紙は金曜日 _____ 向こう _____ 着くでしょう。

This letter will probably arrive there by Friday.

8. Kare wa isshūkan _____ nido Shinjuku _____ eiga _____ mi _____ iku.

彼は一週間 _____ 二度新宿 _____ 映画 _____ 見 _____ 行く。

He goes to Shinjuku to see a movie twice a week.

9. Ōzei no hito ga gaikoku _____ Nihon _____ kenbutsu _____ kuru.

大勢の人が外国 _____ 日本 _____ 観物 _____ 来る。

Many people come to Japan from foreign countries for sightseeing.

10. Densha _____ orite, eki _____ resutoran _____ haitta.

電車 _____ 降りて、駅 _____ レストラン _____ 入った。

I got off the train and entered a restaurant in the station.

33

と to (3)

Indicates a quotation or what someone thinks or hears.

Quotation (direct/indirect) + to

Jimu ga “Ohayō,” **to** iimashita.

ジムが「お早よう。」と言いました。

Jim said, "Good morning."

Kare wa “Kore was nan desu ka,” **to** kikimashita.

彼は「これは何ですか。」と聞きました。

He asked, "What is this?"

Tomu wa ato de kuru **to** itta.

トムは後で来ると言った。

Tom said that he would come later.

Sentence + to + omoi/kiku

Tsuri ni ikō **to** omoimasu.

釣りに行こうと思います。

I think I'll go fishing.

Watashi wa Tomu wa konai **to** omotta.

私はトムは来ないと思った。

I thought that Tom wouldn't come

Biru ga nyūin shita **to** kiita.

ビルが入院したと聞いた。

I heard that Bill had been hospitalized.

Noun + to iu + noun

Miki **to** iu hito ga kimashita.

三木という人が来ました。

A person called Miki came.

Yamato **to** iu ryokan ni tomatta.

大和という旅館に泊まった。

I stayed at an inn called Yamato.

Arita **to** iu machi e itta.

有田という町へ行った。

I went to a town called Arita.

Sore wa nan **to** iu shōsetsu desu ka.

それは何という小説ですか。

What is that novel called?

Double particles used to express "something like" or "something to the effect."

to ka (1) とか

Noun + to ka

Hiru **to** ka iu Amerikajin ni atta.

ヒルとかいうアメリカ人に会った。

I met an American named something like Hill.

Sentence + to ka

Rinda ga kekkon suru **to** ka kiita.

リンダが結婚するとか聞いた。

I heard something to the effect that Linda is getting married.

Exercise 11 (33–35): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kanojo wa goji _____ kaisha _____ iru _____ iimashita.

彼女は五時 _____ 会社 _____ いる _____ 言いました。

She said that she would be at her company until five o'clock.

2. Kinyōbi _____ tomodachi _____ kaimono _____ ikō _____ omoimasu.

金曜日 _____ 友達 _____ 買物 _____ 行こう _____ 思います。

I think I'll go shopping with my friend on Friday.

3. Pāti _____ Hirota _____ iu hito _____ nomimashita.

パーティー _____ 広田 _____ いう人 _____ 飲みました。

I drank with a person called Hirota at the party.

4. Kare wa basu _____ densha _____ kaeru _____ itte imashita.

彼はバス _____ 電車 _____ 帰る _____ 言っていました。

He said that he would return either by bus or by train.

5. Yamada _____ iu hito _____ anata ni ai _____ kimashita.

山田 _____ いう人 _____ あなたに会い _____ 来ました。

A person called Yamada came to see you.

6. Sumisu-san wa niji _____ Narita _____ tsuku _____ omoimasu.

スミスさんは二時 _____ 成田 _____ 着く _____ 思います。

I think that Mr. Smith will arrive at Narita at two o'clock.

7. Tomu _____ Biru _____ tenrankai _____ ikanakatta _____ kikimashita.

トム _____ ビル _____ 展覧会 _____ 行かなかつた _____ 聞きました。

I heard something to the effect that neither Tom nor Bill went to the exhibition.

8. Yūbe jūji _____ “Gaijin” _____ iu shōsetsu _____ yomimashita.

昨夜十時 _____ 「外人」 _____ いう小説 _____ 読みました。

I read a novel called "Foreigner" until ten o'clock last night.

9. Kare wa doyōbi _____ buchō _____ tsuri _____ iku _____ itte iru.

彼は土曜日 _____ 部長 _____ 釣り _____ 行く _____ 言っている。

He says something to the effect that he'll go fishing with the department head on Saturday.

10. Watashi-tachi wa Yagi _____ iu eki _____ densha _____ orite, soko _____ basu _____ ryokan _____ itta.

私達は八木 _____ いう駅 _____ 電車 _____ 降りて、そこ _____ バス _____ 旅館 _____ 行った。

We got off the train at a station called something like Yagi, and from there went to the inn by bus.

Noun + de

Tomu wa kurasu **de** ichiban ii gakusei desu.

トムはクラスで一番いい学生です。

Tom is the best student in the class.

Nihon **de** ichiban nagai hashi o watarimashita.

日本で一番長い橋を渡りました。

We crossed the longest bridge in Japan.

Noun + no naka + de

Sensei no naka **de** Wada-sensei ga ichiban wakai.

先生の中和田先生が一番若い。

Mr. Wada is the youngest among the teachers.

Kono mittsu no naka **de** kore ga ichiban kirei da.

この三つの中でこれが一番きれいだ。

This is the prettiest among these three.

Noun + to + noun + to

Kono tokei **to** sono tokei **to**, dochira ga takai desu ka.

この時計とその時計と、どちらが高いですか。

Which one is more expensive, this watch or that one?

Nihon ryōri **to** Chūgoku ryōri **to**, dochira o tabemashō ka.

日本料理と中国料理と、どちらを食べましょうか。

Which shall we eat, Japanese food or Chinese food?

Kono kaban **to** sono kaban **to**, nedan ga chigaimasu.

このかばんとそのかばんと、値段が違います。

This briefcase and that one have different prices.

より yori (2)

Indicates a comparison.

Noun + yori

Kore wa sore **yori** karui desu.

これはそれより軽いです。

This is lighter than that.

Kono ie wa ano ie **yori** ōkii desu.

この家はあの家より大きいです。

This house is bigger than that one.

Kono mise wa depāto **yori** yasui.

この店はデパートより安いです。

This store is cheaper than a department store.

V-u + yori

Hikōki de iku hō ga fune de iku **yori** anzen desu.

飛行機で行く方が船で行くより安全です

Going by airplane is safer than going by boat.

Terebi o miru **yori** hon o yomitai.

テレビを見るより本を読みたい。

I'd rather read a book than watch TV.

Atarashii kuruma o kau **yori** shikata ga arimasen.

新しい車を買うより仕方がありません。

There's no other way than to buy a new car.

Exercise 12 (36–38): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kono kurasu _____ ichiban wakai gakusei _____ dare desu ka.

このクラス _____ 一番若い学生 _____ だれですか。

Who is the youngest student in this class?

2. Kare _____ ofisu wa machi _____ ichiban atarashii biru _____ aru.

彼 _____ オフィスは町 _____ 一番新しいビル _____ ある。

His office is in the newest building in the city.

3. Kono kaban _____ naka _____ dore _____ ichiban karui desu ka.

このかばん _____ 中 _____ どれ _____ 一番軽いですか。

Which is the lightest among these briefcases?

4. Kono jaketto _____ ano jaketto _____ , saizu _____ chigaimasu.

このジャケット _____ あのジャケット _____ 、サイズが違います。

This jacket and that jacket are of different sizes.

5. Densha _____ basu _____, dochira _____ ikimashō ka.

電車 _____ バス _____、どちら _____ 行きましょうか。

By which shall we go, a train or bus?

6. Hiragana _____ kanji _____ yasashii desu.

ひらがな _____ 漢字 _____ 易しいです。

Hiragana is easier than kanji.

7. Kare _____ tegami _____ kaku _____ shikata ga arimasen.

彼 _____ 手紙 _____ 書く _____ 仕方がありません。

There is no other way than to write a letter to him.

8. Watashi wa gorufu _____ suru _____ konsāto _____ ikitai desu.

私はゴルフ _____ する _____ コンサート _____ 行きたいです。

I'd rather go to a concert than play golf.

9. Pūru _____ oyogu hō ga umi _____ oyogu _____ anzen desu.

プール _____ 泳ぐ方が海 _____ 泳ぐ _____ 安全です。

Swimming in the pool is safer than swimming in the sea.

10. Fune _____ iku _____ kuruma _____ hashi _____ wataritai desu.

船 _____ 行く _____ 車 _____ 橋 _____ 渡りたいです。

I'd rather cross the bridge by car than go by boat.

Used with an interrogative word, indicates the superlative.

yori (3) より

39

Interrogative + yori (mo)

Kono kōen wa doko yori (mo) shizuka desu.

この公園はどこより（も）静かです。

This park is quieter than anywhere else.

Sara wa dare yori (mo) kanji o takusen shitte iru.

サラはだれより（も）漢字を沢山知っている。

Sarah knows more kanji than anyone else.

Kono naka de, kono kaban ga dore yori (mo) ōkii desu.

この中でこのかばんがどれより（も）大きいです。

Among these, this briefcase is bigger than the others.

Nani yori (mo) ryokō shitai.

何より（も）旅行したい。

I'd like to travel more than anything else.

く ら い kurai (2)

Indicates a comparison in a positive sentence
(gurai is more colloquial).

Noun + kurai/gurai + positive verb

Sono niwa wa gorufujō **kurai** ōkii.
その庭はゴルフ場くらい大きい。
The garden is as big as a golf course.

Kyō no shiken wa kinō no shiken
gurai muzukashikatta.
今日の試験は昨日の試験ぐらい
難しかった。

Today's examination was as difficult as
yesterday's.

Kono ko wa otona **kurai** yoku
tabemasu.
この子は大人くらいよく食べます。
This child eats as much as an adult.

Kono e wa ano e **gurai** kirei da.
この絵はあの絵ぐらいきれいだ。
This picture is as pretty as that one.

ほど hodo (2)

Indicates a comparison in a negative sentence.

Noun + hodo + negative verb

Tomu **hodo** ii gakusei wa imasen.
トムほどいい学生はいません。
There is no student as good as Tom.

Neko wa inu **hodo** hayaku hashirenai.
猫は犬ほど速く走れない。
A cat can't run as fast as a dog.

Kono heya wa toshokan **hodo** shizuka
de wa arimasen.
この部屋は図書館ほど静かではありません。
This room is not as quiet as the library.

Exercise 13 (39-41): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Hara-san wa kono kaisha _____ dare _____ wakai desu.

原さんはこの会社 _____ だれ _____ 若いです。

Miss Hara is younger than anyone else in this company.

2. Kono mise _____ ryōri wa doko _____ yasui desu.

この店 _____ 料理はどこ _____ 安いです。

The food at this restaurant is cheaper than anywhere else.

3. Kono naka _____ kore _____ dore _____ kirei desu.

この中 _____ これ _____ どれ _____ きれいです。

Among these this one is prettier than any others.

4. Watashi wa nani _____ opera _____ mi _____ ikitai.

私は何 _____ オペラ _____ 見 _____ 行きたい。

I'd like to go to see the opera more than anything else.

5. Kaimono _____ doyōbi _____ itsu _____ ii desu.

買物 _____ 上曜日 _____ いつ _____ いいです。

As for shopping, Saturday is better than any other days.

B. Put kurai/gurai or hodo in the blanks.

1. Ano yama wa Fujisan _____ takai desu.

あの山は富士山 _____ 高いです。

That mountain is as high as Mt. Fuji.

2. Kinō no kuizu wa shiken _____ nagakatta.

昨日のクイズは試験 _____ 長かった。

Yesterday's quiz was as long as an examination.

3. Kono sakana wa sono sakana _____ atarashiku arimasen.

この魚はその魚 _____ 新しくありません。

This fish is not as fresh as that one.

4. Gakusci no naka de Tomu _____ ii gakusei wa imasen.

学生の中でトム _____ いい学生はいません。

Among the students, none are as good as Tom.

5. Taigā wa kuruma _____ hayaku hashiremasu.

タイガーは車 _____ 速く走れます。

A tiger can run as fast as a car.

6. Kono michi wa mukō no hiroi michi _____ anzen de wa nai.

この道は向こうの広い道 _____ 安全ではない。

This road is not as safe as the wide road over there.

7. Kono rekishi no hon wa shōsetsu _____ omoshiroi desu.

この歴史の本は小説 _____ 面白いです。

This history book is as interesting as a novel.

8. Kyō no kōgi wa kinō no kōgi _____ omoshirokunakatta.

今日の講義は昨日の講義 _____ 面白くなかった。

Today's lecture wasn't as interesting as yesterday's.

9. Buraun-san wa Nihonjin _____ kanji o takusan shitte iru.

ブラウンさんは日本人 _____ 漢字を沢山知っている。

Miss Brown knows as many kanji as a Japanese does.

10. Sensei no heya wa kyōshitsu _____ hiroku arimasen.

先生の部屋は教室 _____ 広くありません。

The teachers' room isn't as large as a classroom.

42

か ka (3)

Used with an interrogative word to mean
"something," "someone," "someday,"
"somewhere," etc.

Interrogative + ka

Tsukue no ue ni nani **ka** arimasu.

机の上に何かあります。

There is something on the desk.

Dare **ka** kimashita.

だれかきました。

Someone came.

Nani **ka** tsumetai nomimono o kudasai.

何か冷たい飲み物を下さい。

Please give me something cold to drink.

Itsu **ka** Pari e ikitai.

いつかパリへ行きたい。

Someday I want to go to Paris.

Double particles **ka e, ka to**

Kare wa doko **ka e** dekaketa.
彼はどこかへ出かけた。
He went out somewhere.

Kanojo wa dare **ka to** hanashite
imasu.
彼女はだれかと話しています。
She is talking with someone.

Used with an interrogative word to mean
"nothing," "nobody," "nowhere," etc.

mo (3) も

43

Interrogative + mo + negative verb

Soko ni wa nani **mo** arimasen.
そこには何もありません。
There is nothing there.

Dare **mo** kare no jūsho o shiranai.
だれも彼の住所を知らない。
Nobody knows his address.

Double particles **e mo, to mo**

Yūbe doko **e mo** ikanakatta.
昨夜どこへも行かなかつた。
I went nowhere last night.

Kare wa dare **to mo** hanasanakatta.
彼はだれとも話さなかつた。
He talked with nobody.

Used with verbs *naru*, *suru* and others to
indicate a change or choice.

ni (8) に

44

Noun + ni + naru

Kare wa pairotto **ni** narimasu.
彼はパイロットになります。
He will become a pilot.

Kanojo wa byōki **ni** narimashita.
彼女は病気になりました。
She became ill.

Kono heya wa shosai **ni** natte iru.
この部屋は書斎になっている。
This room has been made into a study.

Noun + ni + suru

"Nani **ni** shimasu ka."
"Sushi **ni** shimasu."
「何にしますか。」
「すしにします。」
"What will you have?"
"I'll have sushi."

Kaigi wa kayōbi **ni** shimashō.
会議は火曜日にしましょう。
Let's have the meeting on Tuesday.

Exercise 14 (42–44): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Dare _____ Oda-san _____ jūsho _____ shitte imasu ka.

だれ _____ 小田さん _____ 住所 _____ 知っていますか。

Does anyone know Miss Oda's address?

2. Itsu _____ chichi _____ tsuri _____ ikitai _____ omoimasu.

いつ _____ 父 _____ 釣り _____ 行きたい _____ 思います。

I'd like to go fishing with my father someday.

3. Ano mise _____ nani _____ tsumetai nomimono _____ kaimashō.

あの店 _____ なに _____ 冷たい飲み物 _____ 買いましょう。

Let's buy something cold to drink at that store.

4. Yamada-san wa dare _____ doko _____ dekakemashita.

山田さんはだれ _____ どこ _____ 出かけました。

Mr. Yamada went out somewhere with someone.

5. "Kyōshitsu _____ dare _____ imasu ka." "lie, dare _____ imasen."

「教室 _____ だれ _____ いますか。」「いいえ、だれ _____ いません。」

"Is there anyone in the classroom?" "No, there's nobody."

6. "Yūbe doko _____ ikimashita ka." "Iie, doko _____ ikimasen deshita.

Uchi _____ terebi _____ mite imashita."

「昨夜どこ _____ 行きましたか。」「いいえ、どこ _____ 行きませんでした。

うち _____ テレビ _____ 見ていました。」

"Did you go somewhere last night?" "No, I didn't. I was watching TV at home."

7. Kare wa daigaku _____ sotsugyō shite enginia _____ narimasu.

彼は大学 _____ 卒業してエンジニア _____ なります。

He will graduate from college and become an engineer.

8. "Kono kōto _____ sono kōto _____ , dochira _____ shimasu ka."

"Kochira _____ shimasu."

「このコート _____ そのコート _____ 、どちら _____ しますか。」

「こちら _____ します。」

"Which one will you take, this coat or that one?" "I'll take this one."

9. Kenbutsu _____ nichiyōbi _____ gogo _____ shimashō.

見物 _____ 日曜日 _____ 午後 _____ しましょう。

As for the sightseeing, let's make it on Sunday afternoon.

10. Nomimono _____ biiru _____ wain _____ shimasu.

飲み物 _____ ビール _____ ワイン _____ します。

For a drink, I'd rather have wine than beer.

Followed by the verb **suru**, indicates an occupation or position.

o (4)

を

45

Noun + o + suru

Chichi wa isha o shite imasu.

父は医者をしています。

My father is a doctor.

Oda-san no o-tōsan wa daigaku no gakuchō o shite ita.

小田さんのお父さんは大学の学長をしていました。

Mr. Oda's father was the president of a university.

indicates emphasis.

demo (!)

でも

46

Noun + demo

Sonna koto wa kodomo demo dekimasu.

そんな事は子供でも出来ます。

Even a child can do such a thing.

Konna muzukashii kanji wa sensei demo shiranai.

こんな難しい漢字は先生でも知らない。

Even a teacher doesn't know such a difficult kanji.

Kare wa nichiyōbi demo shigoto ni ikimasu.

彼は日曜日でも仕事に行きます。

He goes to work even on Sundays.

Double particles made
demo, to demo.

Kare wa hokkyoku made demo iku deshō.

彼は北極まででも行くでしょう。

He would go even to the North Pole.

Kanojo wa shiranai hito to demo hanashimasu.

彼女は知らない人とでも話します。

She talks even with strangers.

Used with an interrogative word for positive emphasis to mean "anything," "anyone," "any time," "anywhere," etc.

Interrogative + demo

Kono inu wa nan **demo** tabemasu.

この犬は何でも食べます。

This dog eats anything.

Kono kigu wa dare **demo** tsukaeru.

この器具はだれでも使える。

Anyone can handle this utensil.

Itsu **demo** kite kudasai.

いつでも来て下さい。

Please come any time.

Double particles to demo, kara demo

Kare wa dare **to demo** nomimasu.

彼はだれとでも飲みます。

He drinks with anyone.

Tori wa doko **kara demo** kuru.

鳥はどこからでも来る。

Birds can come from anywhere.

Exercise 15 (45–47): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Yamada-san _____ otōto-san wa hoteru _____ manējā _____ shite imasu.

山田さん _____ 弟さんはホテル _____ マネージャー _____ しています。

Mr. Yamada's younger brother is a hotel manager.

2. Kanojo wa sangatsu _____ Shinjuku _____ resutoran _____ uētoresu _____ shite ita.

彼女は三月 _____ 新宿 _____ レストラン _____ ウエートレス _____ していた。

She was a waitress at a restaurant in Shinjuku until March.

3. Watashi no bōifurendo _____ Tomu wa Tōkyō _____ Eigo _____ sensei _____ shite iru.

私のボーイフレンド _____ トムは東京 _____ 英語 _____ 先生 _____ している。

My boyfriend Tom is an English teacher in Tokyo.

4. Kono kigu _____ dare _____ tsukaemasu. Kodomo _____ tsukaemasu.

この器具 _____ だれ _____ 使えます。子供 _____ 使えます。

Anyone can handle this utensil. Even a child can.

5. Otōto _____ Masao wa yasashii shigoto _____ shimasen.

弟 _____ 正夫は易しい仕事 _____ しません。

My younger brother Masao doesn't even do easy work.

6. Shachō _____ ie _____ kore _____ ōkiku arimasen.

社長 _____ 家 _____ これ _____ 大きくありません。

Even the company president's house isn't as large as this.

7. Sumisu-san wa Amerikajin _____ Nihongo _____ hanshimasu.

スミスさんはアメリカ人 _____ 日本語 _____ 話します。

Mr. Smith speaks in Japanese even with Americans.

8. Kare wa dare _____ tsuri _____ ikimasu.

彼はだれ _____ 釣り _____ 行きます。

He goes fishing with anyone.

9. Wada-san wa shashin _____ tori _____ Himalaya _____ ikudeshō.

和田さんは写真 _____ とり _____ ヒマラヤ _____ 行くでしょう。

Mr. Wada would go even to the Himalaya Mountains to take pictures.

10. Konpyūtā _____ koto _____ Miki-san ga nan _____ shitte imasu.

コンピューター _____ 事 _____ 三木さんが何 _____ 知っています。

As for computers, Miss Miki knows everything.

11. "Nanyōbi _____ eiga _____ ikimashō ka." "Itsu _____ ii desu."

「何曜日 _____ 映画 _____ 行きましょうか。」「いつ _____ いいです。」

"What day shall we go to the movie?" "Any day will be fine."

12. Gakusei wa doko _____ kimasu. Afurika _____ kimasu.

学生はどこ _____ 来ます。アフリカ _____ 来ます。

The students come from everywhere. They come even from Africa.

Noun + de

Byōki **de** shigoto ni ikemasen.
病気で仕事に行けません。

I can't go to work due to illness.

Kōtsū jiko **de** ōzei no hito ga
shinimashita.
交通事故で大勢の人が死にました。

Many people died due to a traffic accident.

Kaji **de** ie ga yakemashita.
火事で家が焼けました。

The house burned down due to a fire.

Tsuyoi kaze **de** ki ga taoreta.
強い風で木が倒れた。

Trees fell down due to strong wind.

Noun + kara

Watashi wa Oda-san **kara** jishin no nyūsu o kiita.
私は小田さんから地震のニュースを聞いた。

I heard the news about the earthquake from Mr. Oda.

Kare wa seifu **kara** hojokin o moratta.
彼は政府から補助金をもらった。

He received a grant from the government.

Kanojo wa tsukare **kara** byōki ni natta.
彼女は疲れから病気になった。

She became ill from fatigue.

Wain wa budō **kara** tsukuru.
ワインはぶどうから作る。

Wine is made from grapes.

Note: As in the following example, de also indicates material.

Kami **de** ningyō o tsukutta.
紙で人形を作った。

I made a doll with paper.

De is used with materials that retain their original states, whereas kara is used when a chemical change takes place in the process.

Indicates a person who gives something or provides a service, replaceable with **kara** in the first sense, but not the second.

ni (9) に

50

**Noun (person) + ni + noun (thing)
+ o + morau / naru**

Chichi **ni** kamera o moraimashita.
父にカメラをもらいました。
I received a camera from my father.

Sensei **ni** kanji o naraimashita.
先生に漢字を習いました。
We learned kanji from the teacher.

Note: When a giver is an impersonal institution, **kara** must be used rather than **ni**.

Seifu **kara** hojokin o moratta.
政府から補助金をもらった。
I received a grant from the government.

Noun (person) + ni + V-te + morau

Hara-san **ni** yūbinkyoku e itte
moratta.
原さんに郵便局へ行ってもらった。
I had Miss Hara go to the post office for me.

Kanojo **ni** kitte o katte moratta.
彼女に切手を買ってもらった。
I had her buy some stamps for me.

Kare **ni** raijō o naoshite morau.
彼にラジオを直してもらう。
I'll have him fix the radio for me.

Exercise 16 (48–50): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put de, ni, or kara in the blanks.

1. Shigoto _____ gorufu ni ikemasen deshita.

仕事 _____ ゴルフに行けませんでした。

I couldn't go golfing due to my work.

2. Tomodachi _____ kono e o moratta.

友達 _____ この絵をもらった。

I received this picture from my friend.

3. Tanaka-sensei _____ kanji o naraimasu.

田中先生 _____ 漢字を習います。

We learn kanji from Professor Tanaka.

4. Jiko _____ hito ga shinimashita.

事故 _____ 人が死にました。

People died because of the accident.

5. Kare wa daigaku _____ sukarashippu o moratta.

彼は大学 _____ スカラーシップをもらった。

He received a scholarship from the university.

6. Kodomo ga kami _____ hikoki o tsukutte imasu.

子供が紙 _____ 飛行機を作っています。

The child is making airplanes with paper.

7. Wain wa budō _____ tsukurimasu.

ワインはぶどう _____ 作ります。

Wine is made from grapes.

8. Hara-san _____ konsāto no kippu o katte moratta.

原さん _____ コンサートの切符を買ってもらつた。

I had Miss Hara buy a concert ticket for me.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Oda-san wa byōki _____ sengetsu _____ mikka _____ nyūin shita.

小田さんは病気 _____ 先月 _____ 三日 _____ 入院した。

Mr. Oda was hospitalized on the third of last month due to illness.

2. Yūbe _____ kaze _____ kōen _____ ki ga taoremashita.

昨夜 _____ 風 _____ 公園 _____ 木が倒れました。

Trees in the park fell down because of the wind last night.

3. Watashi _____ Haruko-san _____ Biru _____ tenisu _____ naraimashita.

私 _____ 春子さん _____ ビル _____ テニス _____ 習いました。

Both Haruko and I learned tennis from Bill.

4. Densha _____ jiko _____ hito ga sannin shinda _____ kikimashita.

電車 _____ 事故 _____ 人が三人死んだ _____ 聞きました。

I heard something to the effect that three people died because of the train crash.

5. Ginza _____ kaji _____ "Hirota" _____ iu mise ga yakemashita.

銀座 _____ 火事 _____ 「広田」 _____ いう店が焼けました。

A store called "Hirota" burned down due to the fire in Ginza.

6. Watashi wa haha _____ ikkagetsu _____ ichido tegami _____ moraimasu.

私は母 _____ 一か月 _____ 一度手紙 _____ もらいます。

I receive a letter from my mother once a month.

7. Jimu wa sensei _____ Nihongo _____ shinbun _____ yonde moratta.

ジムは先生 _____ 日本語 _____ 新聞 _____ 読んでもらった。

Jim had his teacher read a Japanese newspaper for him.

8. Watashi wa Haruko-san _____ kitte _____ kai _____ yūbinkyoku _____ itte moratta.

私は春子さん _____ 切手 _____ 買い _____ 郵便局 _____ 行つもらつた。

I had Haruko go to the post office to buy stamps for me.

In the construction "wa...ga," indicates the subject or the object of certain verbs and adjectives.

ga (2) ガ

51

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (subject) + ga

Zō wa hana **ga** nagai desu.

象は鼻が長いです。

Elephants have long trunks. (As for elephants, their trunks are long.)

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (object) + ga + verb of ability/necessity

Jimu wa Nihongo **ga** hanasemasu.

ジムは日本語が話せます。

Jim can speak Japanese.

Akira wa unten **ga** dekimasu.

明は運転ができます。

Akira can drive (a car).

Gakusei wa ii jisho **ga** irimasu.

学生はいい辞書が要ります。

Students need good dictionaries.

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (object) + ga + verb of sensation

(Watashi wa) ongaku **ga** kikoemasu.

(私は) 音楽が聞こえます。

(I) can hear the music. (The music can be heard.)

(Watashi wa) yama **ga** miemasu.

(私は) 山が見えます。

(I) can see the mountain.

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (object) + ga + adjectival noun

Kanojo wa piano **ga** jōzu desu.

彼女はピアノが上手です。

She is good at piano.

Kare wa supōtsu **ga** suki desu.

彼はスポーツが好きです。

He likes sports.

**Noun (topic) + wa + noun (object) + ga +
adj. of emotion/desire**

Watashi wa kare no shinsetsu **ga** ureshii.

私は彼の親切がうれしい。

I'm pleased by his kindness.

Watashi wa haha no shi **ga** kanashii.

私は母の死が悲しい。

I'm saddened by my mother's death.

Watashi wa ii kamera **ga** hoshii.

私はいいカメラが欲しい。

I want a good camera.

Watashi wa tempura **ga/o** tabetai.

私はてんぷらが・を食べたい。

I want to eat tempura.

52

が ga (3)

Used as a conjunction to connect two sentences with or without adversative implication.

Sentence + ga + sentence

Tomu wa kimasu **ga** Biru wa kimasen.

トムは来ますがピルは来ません。

Tom is coming but Bill isn't coming.

Sakana wa suki desu **ga** niku wa kirai desu.

魚は好きですが肉は嫌いです。

I like fish but dislike beef.

Renshū o shimasu **ga** jōzu ni narimasen.

練習をしますが上手になりません。

I practice but don't become better.

Kaimono ni itta **ga** nani mo kawanakatta.

買い物に行ったが何も買わなかつた。

I went shopping but bought nothing.

Ga used as a transition word

Konsāto ni ikimasu **ga** issho ni kimasen ka.

コンサートに行きますが一緒に来ませんか？

I'm going to the concert. Would you like to come along?

Watashi mo sono eiga o mimashita **ga**, totemo yokatta desu.

私もその映画を見ましたが、とても良かったです。

I also saw the movie, and found it very good.

Kono jisho o tsukatte imasu **ga** totemo yaku ni tachimasu.

この辞書を使っていますが、とても役に立ちます。

I'm using this dictionary, and find it very useful.

Noun + o + emotive verb

Watashi wa kare no seikō o

yorokonde imasu.

私は彼の成功を喜んでいます。

I'm happy about his success.

Kono ko wa inu o osoremasu.

この子は犬を恐れます。

This child is afraid of dogs.

Kare wa kodomo no shi o kanashinda.

彼は子供の死を悲しんだ。

He grieved at his child's death.

Exercise 17 (51–53): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put o or ga in the blanks.

1. Parēdo _____ mi ni itta. Parēdo _____ yoku micta.

パレード _____ 見に行った。パレード _____ よく見えた。

I went to see the parade. I could see the parade well.

2. Ane wa ryōri _____ jōzu desu. Yūbe Chūgoku ryōri _____ tsukurimashita.

姉は料理 _____ 上手です。昨夜中国料理 _____ 作りました。

My older sister is good at cooking. She made Chinese food last night.

3. Tomu wa Furansugo _____ hanashimasu. Akira wa Eigo _____ hanasemasu.

トムはフランス語 _____ 話します。明は英語 _____ 話せます。

Tom speaks French. Akira can speak English.

4. Kanojo wa mainichi piano no renshū _____ shite imasu ga, motto renshū _____ irimasu.

彼女は毎日ピアノの練習 _____ していますが、もっと練習 _____ 要ります。

She practices the piano every day, but she needs more practice.

5. Watashi wa kare no seikō _____ ureshii. Haha mo kare no seikō _____ yorokonde imasu.

私は彼の成功 _____ うれしい。母も彼の成功 _____ 喜んでいます。

I'm pleased by his success. My mother is also happy about it.

6. Tsumetai nomimono _____ hoshii. Biru _____ nomitai.

冷たい飲み物 _____ 欲しい。ビール _____ 飲みたい。

I want a cold drink. I want to drink beer.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kono kuruma _____ enjin _____ ii desu.

この車 _____ エンジン _____ いいです。

This car has a good engine.

2. Buraun-san wa Nihongo _____ hanaseru. Kanji _____ hyaku _____ kakeru.

ブラウンさんは日本語 _____ 話せる。漢字 _____ 百 _____ 書ける。

Miss Brown can speak Japanese. She can write about a hundred kanji.

3. Nihon ryōri _____ naka _____ nani _____ ichiban suki desu ka.

日本料理 _____ 中 _____ 何 _____ 一番好きですか。

What do you like most among Japanese food?

4. Nikai _____ kōdō _____ ongaku _____ kikoemasu.

二階 _____ 講堂 _____ 音楽 _____ 聞こえます。

I can hear music from the auditorium on the second floor.

5. Yamada-san wa Oda-san _____ tenisu _____ jōzu desu.

山田さんは小田さん _____ テニス _____ 上手です。

Miss Yamada is better at tennis than Miss Oda.

6. Kanojo wa ongaku _____ suki desu _____ supōtsu _____ suki de wa nai.

彼女は音楽 _____ 好きです _____ スポーツ _____ 好きではない。

She likes music but doesn't like sports.

7. Hara-san ga nichiyōbi _____ uchi _____ kimasu _____ , anata _____ kimasen ka.

原さんが日曜日 _____ うち _____ 来ます _____ 、あなた _____ 来ませんか。

Mr. Hara is coming to my house on Sunday. Would you like to come over, too?

8. Sono ko wa inu _____ shi _____ nani _____ kanashinda.

その子は犬 _____ 死 _____ 何 _____ 悲しんだ。

The child grieved at his dog's death more than anything.

Noun + de

Kodomo ga hadashi **de** hashitte iru.
子供がはだしで走っている。
A child is running barefoot.

Kono yasai wa nama **de** tabemasu.
この野菜は生で食べます。
I eat this vegetable raw.

Ano kōjō wa jikan **de** haraimasu.
あの工場は時間で払います。
That factory pays by the hour.

Ichirittoru kan **de** jūsu o uru.
一リットル缶でジュースを売る。
They sell juice in one liter cans.

Number + counter + de

Watashi wa hitori **de** kaigan e itta.
私は一人で海岸へ行った。
I went to the beach alone.

Kono nōto wa nisatsu **de** sanbyakuen
desu.
このノートは二冊で三百円です。
These notebooks are 300 yen for two.

Ninen **de** purojekuto o sumase-
mashita.
二年でプロジェクトを済ませました。
We finished the project in two years.

Nisen'en **de** kono jisho o katta.
二千円でこの辞書を買った。
I bought this dictionary for 2,000 yen.

Sofu wa hachijūgosai **de** shinimashita.
祖父は八十五才で死にました。
My grandfather died at the age of
eighty-five.

だけ dake (I)

Indicates a limit on things and amounts.

Noun + dake

Otoko no ko **dake** (ga) kimashita.

男の子だけ(が) 来ました。

Only boys came.

Mise de pan **dake** (o) kaimashita.

店でパンだけ(を)買いました。

I bought only bread at the store.

Hawai e ichido **dake** itta.

ハワイへ一度だけ行った。

I have been to Hawaii only once.

Double particles dake no, to dake/dake to

Gakusei **dake no** pātii ga atta.

学生だけのパーティーがあった。

There was a party for students only.

Sono koto wa kare **to** dake/dake to hanashita.

その事は彼とだけ・だけと話した。

Concerning the matter, I talked only with him.

Exercise 18 (54–56): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Otoko _____ hito ga hadashi _____ kaigan _____ aruite iru.

男 _____ 人がはだし _____ 海岸 _____ 歩いている。

A man is walking barefoot along the beach.

2. Kono sakana _____ nama _____ tabemasu _____ sore _____ furai ni shimasu.

この魚 _____ 生 _____ 食べます _____ それ _____ フライにします。

I eat this fish raw but fry that one.

3. Sūpā _____ ringo _____ hako _____ kaimashita.

スーパー _____ りんご _____ 箱 _____ 買いました。

I bought apples by the case at the supermarket.

4. Hoteru _____ Tōkyō-eki _____ takushii _____ juppun _____ ikemasu.

ホテル _____ 東京駅 _____ タクシー _____ 十分 _____ 行けます。

You can go from the hotel to Tokyo Station in ten minutes by taxi.

5. Kare wa jiko _____ kyōnen no nigatsu _____ sanjūnisai _____ shinda.

彼は事故 _____ 去年の二月 _____ 三十二才 _____ 死んだ。

He died last February at age 32, due to an accident.

6. Kanda _____ hon'ya _____ kono jisho _____ nanahyakuen _____ katta.

神田 _____ 本屋 _____ この辞書 _____ 七百円 _____ 買った。

I bought this dictionary for 700 yen at a bookstore in Kanda.

7. Kanojo wa sono shigoto _____ hitori _____ nikagetsu _____ sumasemashita.

彼女はその仕事 _____ 一人 _____ 二か月 _____ 消ませました。

She finished the work all by herself in two months.

8. Terebi _____ nyūsu _____ mimasu. Eiga _____ mimasen.

テレビ _____ ニュース _____ 見ます。映画 _____ 見ません。

I watch only news on TV. I don't watch movies.

9. Jimu wa sensei _____ Nihongo _____ hanashimasu.

ジムは先生 _____ 日本語 _____ 話します。

Jim speaks in Japanese only with his teacher.

10. Gakusei _____ pātii _____ ichido _____ ikimashita.

学生 _____ パーティー _____ 一度 _____ 行きました。

I went to a party exclusively for students only once.

11. Kono kurasu _____ Biru _____ Tomu _____ tenrankai _____ itta.

このクラス _____ ビル _____ トム _____ 展覧会 _____ 行った。

In this class only Bill and Tom went to the exhibition.

Indicates a limit on an action or state.

dake (2) だけ

57

Verb + dake

Maiasa jūsu o ippai nomu **dake** da.

毎朝ジュースを一杯飲むだけだ。

I just drink a glass of juice every morning.

Eki no mae no mise de wa ichido katta **dake** desu.

駅の前の店では一度買っただけです。

I shopped once in that store in front of the station.

Adjective + dake

Kono kēki wa amai **dake** desu.

このケーキは甘いだけです。

This cake is sweet, that's all.

Ano hoteru wa takai **dake** de yokunai desu.

あのホテルは高いだけで良くないです。

The hotel is just expensive, no good at all.

 de (7)

Indicates the time of completion or expiration (replaceable by ni).

Noun (time) + de

Kono biru wa sangatsu **de** kansei shimasu.

このビルは三月で完成します。

This building will be completed as of March.

Keiyaku wa gogatsu mikka **de** kireru.

契約は五月三日で切れる。

The contract expires as of May third.

Kongakki wa kono kinyōbi **de** owari masu.

今学期はこの金曜日で終わります。

This term will end this Friday.

Note: Use of de hints that something lasts up to a certain time, whereas ni simply indicates the time.

 demo (3)

Following a noun, indicates the alternative "or something"

Noun + demo

O-cha **demo** ikaga desu ka.

お茶でもいかがですか。

Would you like a cup of tea or something?

Toshokan e itte zasshi ka shinbun **demo** mimasu.

図書館へ行って雑誌か新聞でも見ます。

I'll go to the library and look at magazines and newspapers or something.

Kaigan **e** **demo** ikimasen ka.

海岸へでも行きませんか。

How about going to the beach or somewhere?

Kono pan wa tori **ni** **demo** yarimashō.

このパンは鳥にでもやりましょう。

Let's give this bread to birds or something.

Exercise 19 (57–59): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kono heya wa ano heya _____ hiroi _____ desu.

この部屋はあの部屋 _____ 広い _____ です。

This room is larger than that room, that's all.

2. Yūbe uchi _____ jūji _____ terebi _____ mita _____ desu.

昨夜うち _____ 十時 _____ テレビ _____ 見た _____ です。

Last night I just watched TV at home until ten o'clock.

3. Kare _____ bā _____ ikimashita ga, jūsu _____ nondar _____ desu.

彼 _____ バー _____ 行きましたが、ジュース _____ 飲んだ _____ です。

I went to the bar with him, but I just had juice.

4. Kono kēki wa amai _____ de sono pai _____ oishiku arimasen.

このケーキは甘い _____ でそのパイ _____ おいしくありません。

This cake is just sweet and isn't as tasty as that pie.

5. Sono hito to wa tomodachi _____ ie _____ ichido atta _____ da.

その人とは友達 _____ 家 _____ 一度会った _____ だ。

I just met the person once at my friend's house.

6. Watashi _____ pasupōto wa hachigatsu itsuka _____ kiremasu. Atarashii pasupōto _____ irimasu.

私 _____ パスポートは八月五日 _____ 切れます。新しいパスポート _____ 要ります。

My passport will expire as of August fifth. I need a new passport.

7. "Kaigi wa goji _____ owarimasu ka." "Hai, yoji _____ owaru _____ omoimasu."

「会議は五時 _____ 終わりますか。」「はい、四時 _____ 終わる _____ 思います。」

"Will the conference be over by five o'clock?" "Yes, I think it'll be over at four o'clock."

8. Pan'ya _____ itte dōnatsu _____ katte kimasu.

パン屋 _____ 行ってドーナツ _____ 買ってきます。

I'll go to the bakery and buy some doughnuts or something.

9. Kono sakana _____ neko _____ yarimashō.

この魚 _____ 猫 _____ やりましょう。

Let's give this fish to a cat or something.

10. Kono mise _____ haitte atarashii konpyūtā _____ mimasen ka.

この店 _____ 入って新しいコンピューター _____ 見ませんか。

Why don't we go into this store and look at new computers or something?

も**mo (4)**

Provides emphasis both in positive and negative sentences.

Number/nan + counter + mo + positive verb

Hon o gosatsu **mo** kaimashita.

本を五冊も買いました。

I bought as many as five books.

Hokkaidō e nando **mo** itta.

北海道へ何度も行った。

I have been to Hokkaido many times.

One + counter + mo + negative verb

Ike ni sakana wa ippiki **mo** imasen.

池に魚は一匹もいません。

There isn't even one fish in the pond.

Ringo wa hitotsu **mo** kawanakatta.

りんごは一つも買わなかった。

I didn't buy even one apple.

Noun/V(-masu) + mo + negative verb

Kare wa watashi ni aisatsu **mo** shinakatta.

彼は私にあいさつもしなかった。

He didn't even greet me.

Kanojo wa repōto o mi **mo** shinai.

彼女はレポートを見もしない。

She doesn't even look at the report.

でも demo (4)

Indicates two or more items as an example of a larger list.

Noun + demo + noun + demo

Sara wa Nihongo **demo** Chūgokugo **demo** hanasemasu.

サラは日本語でも中国語でも話せます。

Sarah can speak Japanese, Chinese, and other languages.

Tomu wa gorufu **demo** tenisu **demo** yarimasu.

トムはゴルフでもテニスでもやります。

Tom plays golf, tennis, and what not.

Noun/V-te + bakari

Kare wa sake **bakari** nonde imasu.

彼は酒ばかり飲んでいます。

He is drinking nothing but sake.

Kodomo wa terebi o mite **bakari** iru.

子供はテレビを見てばかりいる。

The child is doing nothing but watching TV.

Double particles de bakari/bakari de,
ni bakari/bakari ni

Kanojo wa takai mise **de** **bakari** kaimasu.

彼女は高い店でばかり買います。

She shops only at expensive stores.

Ano shōjo wa ie no naka **bakari** **de** asonde iru.

あの少女は家の中ばかりで遊んでいる。

That girl plays only in her house.

Adj./adjectival noun + bakari

Kono shinamono wa yasui **bakari** desu.

この品物は安いばかりです。

This article is just cheap.

Kono kago wa kirei na **bakari** de yaku ni tachimasen.

このかごはきれいなばかりで役に立ちません。

This basket is just pretty, but not useful.

Exercise 20 (60–62): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kare wa biiru _____ sanbai _____ nomimashita.

彼はビール _____ 三杯 _____ 飲みました。

He drank as many as three glasses of beer.

2. Pari _____ nando _____ itta _____ , Rōma _____ made ichido _____ ikanai.

パリ _____ 何度 _____ 行った _____ 、ローマ _____ まだ一度 _____ 行かない。

I have been to Paris many times, but never to Rome.

3. Kanojo wa byōki _____ kinō _____ tabe _____ shimasen.

彼女は病気 _____ 昨日 _____ 食べ _____ しません。

Because of her illness , she hasn't even eaten since yesterday.

4. Doyōbi _____ tsuri _____ itta _____ , sakana wa ippiki _____ tsurenakatta,

土曜日 _____ 釣り _____ 行った _____ 、魚は一匹 _____ 釣れなかった。

I went fishing on Saturday, but didn't catch even one fish.

5. Kono inu wa nan _____ taberu. Niku _____ sakana _____ taberu.

この犬は何 _____ 食べる。肉 _____ 魚 _____ 食べる。

This dog eats anything. He eats meats, fish, and whatever.

6. Kare wa asa _____ ban _____ hon _____ yonde imasu.

彼は朝 _____ 晩 _____ 本 _____ 読んでいます。

He reads nothing but books from morning till night.

7. Sono ko wa kōen _____ inu _____ asonde _____ imasu.

その子は公園 _____ 犬 _____ 遊んで _____ います。

The child does nothing but play with a dog in the park.

8. Kanojo wa bōifurendo _____ tegami _____ kaite _____ iru.

彼女はボーイフレンド _____ 手紙 _____ 書いて _____ いる。

She does nothing but write letters to her boyfriend.

9. Sono eiga _____ mimashita ga, nagai _____ de yokunakatta desu.

その映画 _____ 見ましたが、長い _____ で良くなかったです。

I saw the movie; it was just long, but not good at all.

10. Kanojo wa terebi _____ mae _____ shokuji _____ shimasu.

彼女はテレビ _____ 前 _____ 食事 _____ します。

She has her meals only in front of the TV set.

Indicates an action just completed.

bakari (3) ばかり

63

V-ta + bakari

Kare wa okita **bakari** desu.

彼は起きたばかりです。

He has just gotten up.

Hikōki wa kūkō ni tsuita **bakari** desu.

飛行機は空港に着いたばかりです

The plane has just arrived at the airport.

Fune wa minato o deta **bakari** da.

船は港を出たばかりだ。

The ship has just left the port.

Parēdo ga kono michi o tōtta **bakari** da.

パレードがこの道を通ったばかりだ。

A parade has just passed by on this street.

Indicates an action about to take place, or
is/has been/was taking place, or has taken/took
place (replaceable by **bakari** in the last usage).

tokoro (1) ところ

64

V-u + tokoro

Ima dekakeru **tokoro** desu.

今出かけるところです。

I'm just about to go out.

Anata ni denwa suru **tokoro** deshita.

あなたに電話するところでした。

I was about to call you.

Tomodachi to no yakusoku o
wasureru **tokoro** deshita.

友達との約束を忘れるところでした。

I almost forgot an appointment with my
friend.

Shukudai o shite iru **tokoro** desu.

宿題をしているところです。

I'm in the midst of doing my homework.

Kare wa hon o yonde iru **tokoro** deshita.

彼は本を読んでいるところでした。

He was in the midst of reading a book.

Watashi wa tegami o kaite ita **tokoro**
desu.

私は手紙を書いていたところです。

I've been writing a letter.

V-ta + tokoro

Kare wa dekaketa **tokoro** desu.

彼は出かけたところです。

He has just left.

Indicates the subject of a subordinate clause when it is different from the subject of the main clause.

Noun (subject) + ga

Kare **ga** kita toki, watashi wa shokuji o shite imashita.
彼が来た時、私は食事をしていました。

When he came, I was having a meal.

Kaigi **ga** owatta ato de, kanojo wa kaisha o demashita.
会議が終わった後で、彼女は会社を出ました。

After the meeting ended, she left the company.

Kare **ga** kuru made, watashi wa robii de matte ita.
彼が来るまで、私はロビーで待っていた。

I was waiting in the lobby until he came.

Watashi wa **kare** **ga** kuru mae ni, heyo o sōji shita.
私は彼が来る前に、部屋を掃除した。

I cleaned the room before he came.

Note: The topic or subject of a main clause may be put before the subordinate clause, as in the last example.

Exercise 21 (63–65): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Ima okita _____ de mada nani _____ tabete imasen.

今起きた _____ でまだ何 _____ 食べていません。

I've just gotten up and haven't eaten anything yet.

2. Hawai _____ fune wa minato _____ haitta _____ desu.

ハワイ _____ 船は港 _____ 入った _____ です。

The ship from Hawaii has just entered the port.

3. Wada-san _____ shokuji _____ dekakeru _____ desu.

和田さん _____ 食事 _____ 出かける _____ です

I'm about to go out for dinner with Mr. Wada.

4. Ashita _____ shukudai _____ wasureru _____ deshita.

明日 _____ 宿題 _____ 忘れる _____ でした。

I almost forgot about tomorrow's homework.

5. Ōsaka _____ tomodachi _____ tegami _____ kaite ita _____ desu.

大阪 _____ 友達 _____ 手紙 _____ 書いていた _____ です。

I have been writing a letter to my friend in Osaka.

6. Densha wa Nihon _____ ichiban nagai hashi _____ watatta _____ desu.

電車は日本 _____ 一番長い橋 _____ 渡った _____ です。

The train has just crossed the longest bridge in Japan.

7. Kaigi _____ owaru _____ , kono heya _____ matte ite kudasai.

会議 _____ 終わる _____ 、この部屋 _____ 待っていて下さい。

Until the meeting is over, please wait in this room.

8. Watashi _____ buchō _____ kaeru _____ , sono shigoto _____ sumaseta.

私 _____ 部長 _____ 帰る _____ 、その仕事 _____ 溝ませた。

I had finished the work before the department head returned.

9. Shiken _____ owatta ato de, gakusei _____ sutajiamu _____ sakkā _____ mi _____ itta.

試験 _____ 終わった後で、学生 _____ スタジアム _____ サッカー _____ 見 _____ 行った。

After the examination ended, the students went to the stadium to see the soccer.

10. Kare _____ kyōshitsu _____ haitta toki, sensei wa gakusei _____ kanji _____ oshiete iru _____ deshita.

彼 _____ 教室 _____ 入った時、先生は学生 _____ 漢字 _____ 教えている _____ でした。

When he entered the classroom, the teacher was in the midst of teaching kanji to the students.

11. Watashi _____ eki _____ tsuita toki, densha ga hōmu _____ deta _____ datta.

私 _____ 駅 _____ 着いた時、電車がホーム _____ 出た _____ だった。

When I arrived at the station, a train had just left the platform.

から kara (3)

Used as a conjunction meaning "after" or "since."

V-te + kara

Shawā o abite **kara** nemasu.

シャワーを浴びてから寝ます。

I go to bed after taking a shower.

Shukudai o sumasete **kara**, eiga o mini ikimashō.

宿題を済ませてから、映画を見に行きましょう。

Let's go see a movie after we finish our homework.

Daigaku o sotsugyō shite **kara**, ginkō ni tsutomemasu.

大学を卒業してから、銀行に勤めます。

After graduating from college, I'll be employed in the bank.

Watashi-tachi ga kekkon shite **kara** gonen ni naru.

私達が結婚してから五年になる。

It's been five years since we got married.

ながら nagara (1)

Indicates simultaneous actions by one subject.

V(-masu) + nagara

Arukina**agara** hanashimashō.

歩きながら話しましょう。

Let's talk as we walk.

Rajio o kikin**agara** benkyō shimasu.

ラジオを聞きながら勉強します。

I study while listening to the radio.

Kare wa yoru hatarakin**agara** daigaku ni itta.

彼は夜働きながら大学に行った。

He went to college while working at night.

Inu ga hoen**agara** hashitte imasu.

犬が吠えながら走っています。

The dog is barking while it runs.

Noun (subject) + ga + verb + noun

Haha **ga** yoku kau mise wa asoko desu.

母がよく買う店はあそこでです。

The store where my mother often shops is over there.

Hara-san **ga** tsukatte iru tsukue wa sore desu.

原さんが使っている机はそれです。

The desk that Miss Hara is using is that one.

Kore wa watashi **ga** totta nōto desu.

これは私がとったノートです。

These are the notes that I took.

Watashi **ga** Miki-san ni karita hon wa omoshiroi desu.

私が三木さんに借りた本は面白いです。

The book that I borrowed from Mr. Miki is interesting.

Exercise 22 (65–68): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Hoteru _____ asagohan _____ tabete _____, kenbutsu _____ dekakemashita.

ホテル _____ 朝ご飯 _____ 食べて _____、見物 _____ 出かけました。

After having breakfast at the hotel, we went sightseeing.

2. Kare ga kono ie _____ katte _____ kotoshi _____ yonen _____ narimasu.

彼がこの家 _____ 買って _____ 今年 _____ 四年 _____ なります。

It's been four years this year since he bought this house.

3. Watashi wa kōhii _____ nomi _____ kare _____ nijikan _____ hanashita.

私はコーヒー _____ 飲み _____ 彼 _____ 二時間 _____ 話した。

I talked with him as long as two hours over a cup of coffee.

4. Gakusei wa nōto _____ tori _____ kōgi _____ kiite imasu.

学生はノート _____ とり _____ 講義 _____ 聞いています。

Students are listening to the lecture while taking notes.

5. Tomu wa jisho _____ mi _____ Nihongo _____ tegami _____ kaite iru.

トムは辞書 _____ 見 _____ 日本語 _____ 手紙 _____ 書いている。

Tom is writing a letter in Japanese while looking at a dictionary.

6. Tomodachi _____ kita toki, hanbāgā _____ tabe _____ terebi _____ sumō _____ mita.

友達 _____ 来た時、ハンバーガー _____ 食べ _____ テレビ _____ すもう _____ 見た。

When my friend came, we watched sumo on TV while eating hamburgers.

7. Watashi-tachi wa shigoto _____ sumasete _____, Hara-san _____ yoku iku bā _____ nondā.

私達は仕事 _____ 汰ませて _____ 、原さん _____ よく行くバー _____ 飲んだ。

After finishing our work, we had drinks at the bar that Mr. Hara frequented.

8. Ani _____ tsutomete iru kaisha wa ano biru _____ nikai _____ arimasu.

兄 _____ 勤めている会社はあのビル _____ 二階 _____ あります。

The company where my older brother is employed is on the second floor of that building.

9. Kinō watashi _____ atta hito wa chichi _____ tomodachi _____ Honda-san desu.

昨日私 _____ 会った人は父 _____ 友達 _____ 本田さんです。

The person that I met yesterday is Mr. Honda, my father's friend.

10. Watashi wa Tanaka-san _____ kaita repōto _____ nando _____ yomimashita.

私は田中さん _____ 書いたレポート _____ 何度 _____ 読みました。

I read many times the report that Miss Tanaka wrote.

69

の no (3)

Indicates the subject of a relative clause
(replaceable by ga).

Noun (subject) + no + verb + noun

Kare **no** kaku hon wa omoshiroi.

彼の書く本は面白い。

The books that he writes are interesting.

Are wa ani **no** oshiete iru gakkō desu.

あれは兄の教えている学校です。

That is the school where my older brother is teaching.

Oda-san **no** tsutta sakana wa ōkikatta.

小田さんの釣った魚は大きかった。

The fish that Mr. Oda caught was big.

Watashi **no** shiranai hito ga ōzei imashita.

私の知らない人が大勢いました。

There were many people whom I did not know.

Sentence + kara

Ashita shiken ga aru **kara**, konban benkyō shimasu.

明日試験があるから、今晚勉強します。

Because I have an examination tomorrow, I'll study tonight.

Biru o nonda **kara**, nemui desu.

ビールを飲んだから、眠いです。

Because I drank beer, I'm sleepy.

Ima isogashii **kara**, ato de kite kudasai.

今忙しいから、後で来てください。

I'm busy now, so please come later.

Kono ka wa taisetsu da **kara**, yoku fukushū shinasai.

この課は大切なから、よく復習しなさい。

Because this chapter is important, please review it well.

Byōki datta **kara**, gakkō o yasunda.

病気だったから、学校を休んだ。

Because I was ill, I was absent from school.

Indicates a more concrete reason than **kara**.
Cannot be followed by a main clause indicating the speaker's volition, command, or invitation.

node (ノ) ので

Sentence + node

Shiai ga aru **node**, mainichi renshū shite iru.

試合があるので、毎日練習している。

Because there's a tournament, we practice every day.

Tenki ga yokatta **node**, pikunikku ni itta.

天気が良かったので、ピクニックに行った。

Because the weather was good, we went on a picnic.

Nichiyōbi datta **node**, dōbutsuen wa konde ita.

日曜日だったので、動物園は混んでいた。

Because it was Sunday, the zoo was crowded.

Toshokan was shizuka na **node**, yoku benkyō dekimasu.

図書館は静かなので、よく勉強出来ます。

The library is quiet, so I can study well.

Note: Da changes to na before **node** as in the last example.

Exercise 23 (69–71): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put kara or node in the blanks.

1. Tanaka-san ga iku _____, watashi mo ikimasu.

田中さんが行く _____、私も行きます。

Because Miss Tanaka will go, I'll go, too.

2. Buchō wa ima isogashii _____, ato de denwa shite kudasai.

部長は今忙しい _____、後で電話して下さい。

The department head is busy now, so please call later.

3. Shukudai ga aru _____, eiga o mi ni ikemasen.

宿題がある _____、映画を見に行けません。

Because I have homework, I can't go to see the movie.

4. Doyōbi na _____, depāto wa konde imasu.

土曜日な _____、デパートは混んでいます。

Because it is Saturday, the department store is crowded.

5. Kēki o moratta _____, issho ni tabemashō.

ケーキをもらった _____、一緒に食べましょう。

I got some cakes, so let's have them together.

6. Yoku renshū shita _____, piano ga jōzu ni narimashita.

よく練習した _____、ピアノが上手になりました。

Because I practiced hard, I've become better at the piano.

7. Ashita wa nichiyōbi da _____, uchi ni imasu.

明日は日曜日だ _____、うちにいます。

Tomorrow is Sunday, so I stay home.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Haha wa chichi _____ tsutta sakana _____ ryōri shita.

母は父 _____ 釣った魚 _____ 料理した。

My mother cooked the fish that my father caught.

2. Heya _____ kabe _____ Hirota-san _____ totta shashin ga hatte aru.

部屋 _____ 壁 _____ 広川さん _____ とった写真がはってある。

The photo that Mr. Hirota took is on the wall of the room.

3. Biru wa Nihon _____ gonen _____ iru _____ , Nihongo _____ jōzu desu.

ビルは日本 _____ 五年 _____ いる _____ 、日本語 _____ 上手です。

Bill has been in Japan as many as five years, so he's good at Japanese.

4. Hikōki _____ deru _____ jikan ga aru _____ , o-cha _____ nomimashō.

飛行機 _____ 出る _____ 時間がある _____ 、お茶 _____ 飲みましょう。

We have time before the plane leaves, so let's have tea or something.

5. Kono jisho wa ii desu _____ , takai _____ kaemasen.

この辞書はいいです _____ 、高い _____ 買えません。

This dictionary is good, but too expensive to buy.

6. Chichi ga isha datta _____ , watashi _____ isha _____ natta.

父が医者だった _____ 、私 _____ 医者 _____ なった。

Because my father was a doctor, I also became a doctor.

Indicates a modified pronoun

no (4) の

72

Noun/adj./adjectival noun + no

Verb + no

Chairo **no** o kudasai.

茶色のを下さい。

Give me a brown one.

Shiroi **no** o erabimashita.

白いのを選びました。

I chose a white one.

Kono naka de suki na **no** o torinasai.

この中で好きなのを取りなさい。

Pick the one you like among these.

Shi o kaku **no** wa Oda-san desu.

詩を書くのは小田さんです。

The one who writes poetry is Miss Oda.

Kowareta **no** wa sutete kudasai.

こわれたのは捨てて下さい。

Please throw away the broken ones.

V-u + no

Narau **no** wa oshieru **no** yori yasashii.

習うのは教えるのより易しい。

Learning is easier than teaching.

Tsuri ni iku **no** wa yamemashō.

釣りに行くのはやめましょう。

Let's call off going fishing.

Sentence + no

Tomu ga dansu suru **no** o mita.

トムがダンスするのを見た。

I saw Tom dance.

Hara-san ga yameru **no** o shiranakatta.

原さんが辞めるのを知らなかった。

I didn't know that Mr. Hara is quitting.

なら nara (I)

Used as a conjunction, indicates a supposition or condition.

Noun/adjectival noun + nara

Watashi **nara**, sonna koto wa shinai.

我なら、そんな事はしない。

If I were you, I wouldn't do such a thing.

Ashita **nara**, hima ga arimasu.

明日なら、暇があります。

If (it's) tomorrow, I'm free.

Sono hon ga hitsuyō **nara**, kainasai.

その本が必要なら、買いなさい。

If you need that book, buy it.

Adjective + (no) + nara

Chikai (no) **nara**, arukimasu.

近い (の) なら、歩きます。

If it's near, I'll walk.

Verb + (no) + nara

Kare ga iku (no) **nara**, watashi mo ikimasu.

彼が行く (の) なら、私も行きます。

If he'll go, I'll go, too.

Exercise 24 (72–74): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kono naka _____ ichiban yasui _____ wa ano chairo _____ desu.

この中 _____ 一番安い _____ はあの茶色 _____ です。

The cheapest one among these is that brown one.

2. Shōuindō _____ aru _____ o misete kudasai.

ショーウィンドー _____ ある _____ を見せて下さい。

Please show me the one that is in the show window.

3. Akai _____ to shiroi _____ to, dochira _____ shimasu ka.

赤い _____ と白い _____ と、どちら _____ しますか。

Which are you taking, the red one or white one?

4. Buchō _____ hanashite iru _____ wa Sumisu _____ iu hito desu.

部長 _____ 話している _____ はスマス _____ いう人です。

The person who is talking with the department head is called Smith.

5. Miki-sensei wa gakusei _____ sukii _____ iku _____ ga suki desu.

三木先生は学生 _____ スキー _____ 行く _____ が好きです。

Prof. Miki likes going skiing with his students.

6. Hara-san _____ nyūin shita _____ o ima _____ shiranakatta.

原さん _____ 入院した _____ を今 _____ 知らなかつた。

I didn't know until now that Mr. Hara had been hospitalized.

7. Koko _____ kodomo ga inu _____ asonde iru _____ ga miemasu.

ここ _____ 子供が犬 _____ 遊んでいる _____ が見えます。

From here I can see a child playing with a dog.

8. Gogo _____ , hima ga aru _____ , itsu _____ kite kudasai.

午後 _____ 、暇がある _____ 、いつ _____ 来て下さい。

If (it's) the afternoon, I am free, so come any time.

9. Jisho _____ wasureta _____ , watashi _____ o tsukainasai.

辞書 _____ 忘れた _____ 、私 _____ を使いなさい。

If you forgot your dictionary, use mine.

10. Tenpura _____ tabetai _____ , Wada-san ga ii mise _____ shitte imasu.

てんぷら _____ 食べたい _____ 、和田さんかいい店 _____ 知っています。

If you want to eat tempura, Mr. Wada knows good restaurants.

Noun (topic) + nara

Yōsho **nara**, sangai ni arimasu.

洋書なら、三階にあります。

As for foreign books, they're on the third floor.

Sono kisoku **nara**, raigetsu kawarimasu.

その規則なら、来月変ります。

As for that regulation, it will change next month.

Indicates a condition that brings about an uncontrollable result. The main clause cannot be a command, a request, or volitional.

V-u/-nai + to

Haru ga kuru **to**, atatakaku narimasu.

春が来ると、暖かくなります。

When spring comes, it gets warm.

Ame ga furu **to**, shiai wa arimasen.

雨が降ると、試合はありません。

If it rains, there will be no game.

Kare ga konai **to**, gorufu ga dekinai.

彼が来ないと、ゴルフが出来ない。

If he doesn't come, we can't golf.

Sensei ga yukkuri hanasanai **to**, wakarimasen.

先生がゆっくり話さないと、分かりません。

If the teacher doesn't speak slowly, I can't understand.

Adj-i + to

Shinamono ga warui **to**, yoku urenai.

品物が悪いと、よく売れない。

If goods are bad, they won't sell well.

Noun/adjectival noun + da + to

Semai michi da **to**, basu wa tōremasen.

狭い道だと、バスは通れません。

If it's a narrow street, buses can't get through.

Shizuka da **to**, yoku nemuremasu.

静かだと、よく眠れます。

If it's quiet, I can sleep well.

V-e-re + ba

Chikatetsu de ikeba, nijuppun kakaru.

地下鉄で行けば、二十分かかる。

If you go by subway, it takes 20 minutes

Ano yama ni noboreba, ume ga mieru.

あの山に登れば、海が見える。

If you climb that mountain, you can see
the ocean.

Dekireba, kore mo yatte kudasai.

出来れば、これもやって下さい。

If you can, please do this, too.

Adj-kere + ba

Yasukereba, kaimasu.

安ければ、買います。

If it's cheap, I'll buy it.

Kono karendā ga hoshikereba,
motte ikinasai.

このカレンダーが欲しければ、持って
行きなさい。

If you want this calendar, take it with
you.

Exercise 25 (75–77): Put appropriate particles in the blanks

1. Kurabu _____ kisoku _____, kono panfuretto _____ Eigo _____ Nihongo _____ kaite arimasu.

クラブ _____ 規則 _____、このパンフレット _____ 英語 _____ 日本語 _____ 書いて
あります。

As for the club regulations, they are written in English and Japanese in this pamphlet.

2. Tomu _____, daigaku _____ sotsugyō shite _____, Amerika _____ kaetta.

トム _____、大学 _____ 卒業して _____、アメリカ _____ 帰った。

As for Tom, after graduating from college, he returned to America.

3. Tenki ga ii _____, koko _____ Fuji-san _____ miemasu.

天気がいい _____、ここ _____ 富士山 _____ 見えます。

If weather is good, Mt. Fuji can be seen from here.

4. Ie _____ hairu _____, nikai _____ rasio _____ kikoete kita.

家 _____ 入る _____、二階 _____ ラジオ _____ 聞こえてきた。

When the house was entered, a radio was heard from the second floor.

5. Shinjuku _____ iku _____, resutoran _____ mise _____ eigakan _____ ga aru.

新宿 _____ 行く _____、レストラン _____ 店 _____ 映画館 _____ がある。

If you go to Shinjuku, there are restaurants, stores, and movie houses, among others.

6. Gaikokugo _____ mainichi tsukawanai _____, jōzu _____ narimasen.

外国語 _____ 毎日使わない _____、上手 _____ なりません。

As for a foreign language, if you don't use it every day, you won't become good at it.

7. Kyōto _____ jikan ga are _____, Nijōjō _____ mitai desu.

京都 _____ 時間があれ _____、二条城 _____ 見たいです。

If I have time in Kyoto, I'd like to see Nijo Castle, too.

8. Koko _____ hachiji _____ dere _____, niji _____ mukō _____ tsukimasu.

ここ _____ 八時 _____ 出れ _____、二時 _____ 向こう _____ 着きます。

If we leave here at eight o'clock, we'll arrive there by two o'clock.

9. Kare no jūsho _____ shitte ire _____, kono kami _____ kaite kudasai.

彼の住所 _____ 知っていれ _____、この紙 _____ 書いて下さい。

If you know his address, please write it on this paper.

10. Doyōbi _____ ame ga fure _____, uchi _____ shigoto _____ shimasu.

土曜日 _____ 雨が降れ _____、うち _____ 仕事 _____ します。

If it rains on Saturday, I'll work at home.

ば ba (2)

In the form **ba ii**, means "you need only" or "all you have to do is."

V-e /-re + ba ii

Mainichi sukoshi undō sureba ii.

毎日少し運動すればいい。

You need only exercise a little every day.

Atama ga itai nara, kono kusuri o nomeba ii desu.

頭が痛いなら、この薬を飲めばいいです。

If you have a headache, you need only take this medicine.

Shiritakereba, dare ka ni kikeba ii.

知りたければ、だれかに聞けばいい。

If you want to know, all you have to do is ask someone.

Used to enumerate two or more actions or states.

ba (3)

ば

79

Noun + mo + V-ba/-nakereba ... noun + mo + positive/negative verb

Jimu wa sashimi mo tabereba sushi mo taberu.

ジムはさしみも食べればすしも食べる。

Jim eats both sashimi and sushi.

Biru wa sake mo nomanakereba tabako mo suwanai.

ビルは酒も飲まなければたばこも吸わない。

Bill neither drinks sake nor smokes cigarettes.

Adj-ku + mo + nakereba ... adj-ku + mo + nai

Sono niwa wa hiroku mo nakereba semaku mo nai.

その庭は広くもなければ狭くもない。

The garden is neither large nor small.

Used as a conjunction, indicates a supposition or condition.

tara (ト) たら

80

V-ta/-nakatta + ra

Yuki ga futtara, jitensha ni noremasan.

雪が降ったら、自転車に乗れません。

If it snows, I can't ride a bike.

Tomu ga kitara, issho ni sushi o tabe ni ikimasu.

トムが来たら、一緒にすしを食べに行きます。

If Tom comes, I'll go out to have sushi with him.

Kotoba ga wakaranattara, jisho de shirabenasai

言葉が分からなかつたら、辞書で調べなさい。

If you don't understand the word, check it in a dictionary.

Adj-katta + ra

Samukattara, mado o shimete kudasai.

寒かつたら、窓を閉めて下さい。

If you are cold, please close the window.

Noun/adjectival noun + datta + ra

Hiragana dattara yomemasu.

ひらがなだったら、読みます。

If it's hiragana, I can read it.

Shigoto ga kantan dattara, sugu dekiru.

仕事が簡単だったら、すぐ出来る。

If the job is simple, I can do it easily.

Exercise 26 (78–80): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kanji _____ shiranai _____, hiragana _____ kake _____ ii desu.

漢字 _____ 知らない _____、ひらがな _____ 書け _____ いいです。

If you don't know kanji, you need only write in hiragana.

2. Ichinichi _____ nido kono kusuri _____ nome _____ ii desu.

一日 _____ 二度この薬 _____ 飲め _____ いいです。

You need only take this medicine twice a day.

3. Jimu wa benkyō _____ sure _____ undō _____ shimasu.

ジムは勉強 _____ すれ _____ 運動 _____ します。

Jim does both studies and exercises.

4. Ano hito wa Eigo _____ hanasanakere _____ Nihongo _____ hanasanai.

あの人は英語 _____ 話さなければ _____ 日本語 _____ 話さない。

She speaks neither English nor Japanese.

5. Kare _____ tsutomete iru kaisha wa ōkiku _____ nakere _____ chiisaku _____ nai.

彼 _____ 勤めている会社は大きく _____ なけれ _____ 小さく _____ ない。

The company where he is employed is neither large nor small.

B. Translate the following using -ba or -tara forms.

1. if the weather is good

2. if Tom doesn't come

3. if you don't understand

4. if the book is interesting

5. if it rains

6. if you have time

Used as a conjunction to indicate an action which takes place before the action in the main clause takes place.

tara (2) たら

81

V-ta + tara

Kono shigoto o sumasetara, uchi e kaerimasu.

この仕事を済ませたら、うちへ帰ります。
When I finish this work, I'll go home.

Hon o yondara, kaeshite kudasai.
本を読んだら、返して下さい。

When you finish reading the book,
please return it.

Daigaku o detara, sensei ni naritai.

大学を出たら、先生になりたい。

After I graduate from college, I want to
become a teacher.

Used as a conjunction to indicate a condition that brings about a discovery.

tokoro (2) ところ

82

V-ta + tokoro

Mō ichido shirabeta tokoro, kono dēta wa machigatte ita.

もう一度調べたところ、このデータは
間違っていた。

When I checked again, this data was
wrong.

Kare no ofisu e itta tokoro, dokoka e iten shite ita.

彼のオフィスへ行ったところ、どこかへ
移転していた。

When I went to his office, it had
moved somewhere.

ても te mo (I)

Used as a conjunction to mean "even if."

V-te/-nakute+mo

Hajimete **mo** ii desu ka.

始めてもいいですか。

May we start? (Is it all right even if we start?)

Isoide **mo** ma ni aimasen.

急いでも間に合いません。

Even if you hurry, you won't be in time.

Kusuri o nomanakute **mo** ii desu.

薬を飲まなくともいいです。

You don't have to take the medicine.
(Even if you don't take the medicine,
it's all right.)

Adj-kute + mo

Tōkute **mo** arukimasu.

遠くとも歩きます。

Even if it's far, I'll walk.

Takakute **mo** ii desu ka.

高くともいいですか。

Is it all right even if it's expensive?

Exercise 27 (81-83): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kūkō _____ tsui _____, Hirota-san _____ kite imashita.

空港 _____ 着い _____、広田さん _____ 来ていました。

When I arrived at the airport, Mr. Hirota was there.

2. Kare _____ ie _____ denwa shi _____, kare wa dekaketa _____ deshita.

彼 _____ 家 _____ 電話し _____、彼は出かけた _____ でした。

When I called his house, he had just left.

3. Ano mise _____ kamera _____ kat _____, depāto _____ gopāsento yasukatta.

あの店 _____ カメラ _____ 買つ _____、デパート _____ 五パーセント安かった。

When I bought a camera at that store, it was five percent cheaper than in a department store.

4. Shukudai _____ sumase _____, toshokan _____ hon _____ kaeshi _____ ikimasu.

宿題 _____ 済ませ _____、図書館 _____ 本 _____ 返し _____ 行きます。

After I finish my homework, I'll go to the library to return books.

5. Fakkusu _____ shinamono _____ chūmon shita _____, machigatta _____ ga kita.

ファックス _____ 品物 _____ 注文した _____、間違った _____ が来た。

When I ordered an item by fax, the wrong thing came.

6. Kare _____ tegami _____ kaita _____, isshūkan _____ henji ga kita.

彼 _____ 手紙 _____ 書いた _____、一週間 _____ 返事が来た。

When I wrote a letter to him, his answer came in a week.

7. Kono hon _____ kari _____ ii desu ga, getsuyōbi _____ kaeshite kudasai.

この本 _____ 借り _____ いいですが、月曜日 _____ 返して下さい。

You may borrow this book, but please return it by Monday.

8. Goji _____ kyōshitsu _____ benkyō shi _____ ii desu ka.

五時 _____ 教室 _____ 勉強し _____ いいですか。

May I study in the classroom until five o'clock?

9. Takaku _____ ano kuruma _____ kaitai desu.

高く _____ あの車 _____ 買いたいです。

Even if it's expensive, I want to buy that car.

10. Koko _____ namae _____ kaite kudasai. Jūsho _____ kakanaku _____ ii desu.

ここ _____ 名前 _____ 書いて下さい。住所 _____ 書かなく _____ いいです。

Please write your name here. You don't have to write your address.

Used with a set of contrasting verbs and adjectives.

te mo (2) ても

84

v-te + mo ... v-nakute + mo

Yamada-san ga itte **mo** ikanakute **mo**
watashi wa ikimasu.

山田さんが行つても行かなくても私は
行きます。

I'll go whether Mr. Yamada will or not.

Kare ga kite **mo** konakute **mo**
onaji da.

彼が来ても来なくとも同じだ。

Whether he comes or not makes no
difference.

Adj-kute + mo ... adj-kunakute + mo

Muzukashikute **mo** muzukashiku-
nakute **mo** yatte mimasu.

難しくても難しくなくともやってみます。

I will try whether it is difficult or not.

Takakute **mo** yasukute **mo**
kaimasen.

高くても安くても買いません。

Whether it's expensive or inexpensive, I
won't buy it.

ても te mo (3)

Interrogative + (particle) + V-te + mo

Used with an interrogative word to mean "no matter what, when, where, who," etc.

Itsu kite **mo**, kare wa rusu desu.
いつ来ても、彼は留守です。

No matter when I come, he's out.

Nani o shite **mo**, kanojo wa jōzu da.
何をしても、彼女は上手だ。

No matter what she does, she's good.

Dare ni kiite **mo**, shirimassen.
だれに聞いても、知りません。

No matter whom I ask, no one knows.

Donna ni + adj-kute + mo

Donna ni isogashikute **mo**, undō shimasu.
どんなに忙しくても、運動します。

No matter how busy I am, I do exercises.

Donna ni hoshikute **mo** ima kaenai.
どんなに欲しくても、今買えない。

No matter how much I want it, I can't buy it now.

ては te wa (1)

Indicates a condition that will bring about a negative conclusion.

V-te + wa

Koko de tabete **wa** ikemasen.
ここで食べてはいけません。

You shouldn't eat here. (If you eat here, it isn't good.)

Koko ni kuruma o tomete **wa** komaru.
ここに車を止めては困る。

You shouldn't park here.
(If you park here, it's a problem.)

Adj-kute + wa

Sonna ni tōkute **wa** arukemasen.
そんなに遠くては歩けません。

If it's so far, I can't walk.

Konna ni furukute **wa** dame desu.
こんなに古くては駄目です。

If it's old like this, it's not good.

Exercise 28 (84–86): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Sono koto _____, kachō _____ hanashi _____ hanasanaku _____ onaji desu.

その事 _____、課長 _____ 話し _____ 話さなく _____ 同じです。

As for the matter, it makes no difference whether you talk with the section chief or not.

2. Kanojo _____ tsukutta ryōri _____, oishiku _____ oishikunaku _____ tabemasu.

彼女 _____ 作った料理 _____、おいしく _____ おいしくなく _____ 食べます。

If it's the food she cooked, I'll eat it whether it is tasty or not.

3. Itsu ki _____, Tomu wa tēpu _____ kiki _____ benkyō shite imasu.

いつ来 _____、トムはテープ _____ 聞き _____ 勉強しています。

No matter when I come, Tom is studying while listening to the tapes.

4. Donna ni yoku _____, onaji eiga _____ nido _____ mitakunai.

どんなに良く _____、同じ映画 _____ 二度 _____ 見たくない。

No matter how good it is, I don't want to see the same movie twice.

5. Densha no naka _____ tabako _____ sut _____ komarimasu.

電車の中 _____ たばこ _____ 吸つ _____ 困ります。

You shouldn't smoke in the train.

6. Kaigi _____ owaru _____ ano heya _____ hait _____ ikemasen.

会議 _____ 終わる _____ あの部屋 _____ 入つ _____ いけません。

You shouldn't enter that room until the meeting is over.

7. Kono e _____ hoshii desu _____, konna ni takaku _____ kaemasen.

この絵 _____ 欲しいです _____、こんなに高く _____ 買えません。

I want this painting, but it's too expensive to buy.

のみ nomi (1)

Indicates a limit on things, actions, or states
(replaceable by dake).

Noun/verb/adjective + nomi

Kachō **nomi** (ga) enkai ni shusseki shita.
課長のみ (が) 宴会に出席した。

The section chief alone attended the banquet.

Heya ni wa tsukue (ga) hitotsu aru **nomi** desu.
部屋には机 (が) 一つあるのみです。

There is nothing in the room but one desk.

Kono ie wa ōkii **nomi** desu.
この家は大きいのみです。

This house is large, that's all.

Double particles ni nomi/nomi ni, de nomi/nomi de

Sensei **ni nomi** shirasemashita.
先生のみ知らせました。

I informed only the teacher.

Soko e wa kuruma **de nomi** ikeru.
そこへは車でのみ行ける。

You can go there only by car.

まで made (2)

Adds the sense of "even," for emphasis.

Noun/V-te + made

Sensei **made** kōgi ni shusseki shita.
先生まで講義に出席した。

Even teachers attended the lecture.

Kare wa gakkō o yasunde **made** tetsudatte kureta.
彼は学校を休んでまで手伝ってくれた。

He even skipped school to help me.

Double particles ni made, de made

Sore wa sensei **ni made** hanashita.
それは先生にまで話した。

I told it even to my teacher.

Densha no naka **de made** yomimasu.
電車の中まで読みます。

I read even in the train.

Noun/gerund + sae

Sonna koto wa saru (de) **sae** dekiru.
 そんな事は猿 (で) さえ出来る。
 Even a monkey can do that.

Kore wa tatsu koto **sae** dekinakatta.
 彼は立つことさえ出来なかつた。
 He couldn't even stand up.

Double particles kara sae, ni sae

Enjo wa kaigai **kara** **sae** kita.
 援助は海外からさえ來た。
 Aid came even from abroad.

Kare wa shigoto **ni** **sae** konakatta.
 彼は仕事にさえ來なかつた。
 He didn't even come to work.

Exercise 29 (87-89): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Shachō _____ enkai _____ shusseki shita _____ kikimashita.

社長 _____ 宴会 _____ 出席した _____ 聞きました。

I heard that only company presidents attended the banquet.

2. Chūgokugo _____ hanaseru _____ wa Tomu _____ desu.

中国語 _____ 話せる _____ はトム _____ です。

Tom is the only one who can speak Chinese.

3. Watashi _____ kaita shōsetsu wa Hara-san _____ miseta.

私 _____ 書いた小説は原さん _____ 見せた。

I showed only to Miss Hara the novel that I had written.

4. Kare wa tomodachi _____ kuruma _____ karite _____ doraibu _____ ikimasu.

彼は友達 _____ 車 _____ 借りて _____ ドライブ _____ 行きます。

He even borrows a car from his friend to go for a drive.

5. Jimu wa sensci _____ ryōkō _____ shashin _____ miseta.

ジムは先生 _____ 旅行 _____ 写真 _____ 見せた。

Jim showed the photos of his trip even to his teacher.

6. Kuruma _____ nakere _____ , kaimono _____ ikemasen.

車 _____ なけれ _____ 、買物 _____ 行けません。

If you don't have a car, you can't even go shopping.

7. Chichi wa byōki _____ nan kagetsu _____ aruku koto _____ dekimasen.

父は病気 _____ 何か月 _____ 歩くこと _____ 出来ません。

Due to illness, my father can't even walk for many months.

90

さえ sae (2)

Adds a sense of "if only" or "as long as" to emphasize conditions required for a certain result.

Noun + sae + V-ba

Benkyō **sae** sureba, ii daigaku ni hairemasu.

勉強さえすれば、いい大学に入れます。

If you just study, you can get into a good college.

Jikan **sae** areba, kono purojekuto o yaritai desu.

時間さえあれば、このプロジェクトをやりたいです。

If I can just find time, I'd like to do this project.

Kuruma **sae** karirarereba, ashita ikimasu.

車さえ借りられれば、明日行きます。

If I can only rent a car, I'll go tomorrow.

V(-masu) + sae + sureba;
V-te + sae + ireba

Kanji wa renshū shi **sae** sureba, jōzu ni narimasu.

漢字は練習しさえすれば、上手になります。

As long as you practice kanji, you will get better at it.

Terebi o mite **sae** ireba, kono ko wa shiawase da.

テレビを見てさえいれば、この子は幸せだ。

This child is happy as long as he is watching TV.

Adj-ku + sae + areba

Yasuku **sae** areba, kaimasu.

安くさえあれば、買います。

As long as it's inexpensive, I'll buy it.

Used as a conjunction to indicate "although" or "in spite of the fact that."

noni (1) のに

91

Verb + noni

Kanojo wa netsu ga aru **noni**, kusuri o nomanai.

彼女は熱があるのに、薬を飲まない。

Although she has a fever, she doesn't take medicine.

Adjective + noni

Chikai **noni**, kuruma de ikimashita.

近いのに、車で行きました。

Although it's near, we went by car.

Noun/adjectival noun + na + noni

Kare wa saijitsu na **noni**, shigoto ni itta.

彼は祭日に、仕事に行った。

Although it's a holiday, he went to work.

Heta na **noni**, tenisu ga suki da.

下手なのに、テニスが好きだ。

Although I'm not good at it, I love tennis.

Used as a conjunction to indicate "although," "though," or "but."

nagara (2) ながら

92

V(-masu) + nagara

O-kane ga arinagara haraimasen.

お金がありながら払いません。

Although he has money, he doesn't pay.

Kanojo wa isogashii to iinagara ryokō ni bakari itte iru.

彼女は忙しいと言いながら、旅行にばかり行っている。

Although she says she is busy, she is always going on a trip.

Noun/adjectival noun + nagara

Fuyu **nagara** koko wa atatakai desu.

冬ながらここは暖かいです。

It's warm here, though it's winter.

Zannen **nagara** shusseki dekimasen.

残念ながら出席出来ません。

I'm sorry, but I can't attend.

Adj-i + nagara

Mazushii **nagara** daigaku ni itta.

貧しいながら大学に行った。

Although I was poor, I went to college.

Exercise 30 (90–92): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Jisho _____ areba, kono tegami _____ yomu _____ wa kantan desu.

辞書 _____ あれば、この手紙 _____ 読む _____ は簡単です。

As long as I have a dictionary, reading this letter is simple.

2. Kare wa tomodachi _____ sake o nonde _____ ireba, shiawase desu.

彼は友達 _____ 酒を飲んで _____ いれば、幸せです。

He's happy as long as he is drinking sake with his friends.

3. Kōgi wa omoshiroku _____ areba, nagaku _____ ii desu.

講義は面白く _____ あれば、長く _____ いいです。

The lecture can be long, provided it's interesting.

4. Samui _____ , chichi wa niwa _____ hataraitे iru.

寒い _____ 、父は庭 _____ 働いている。

Although it's cold, my father is working in the yard.

5. Tomu wa ashita shiken _____ aru _____ , terebi _____ mite iru.

トムは明日試験 _____ ある _____ 、テレビ _____ 見ている。

Although he has an exam tomorrow, Tom is doing nothing but watch TV.

6. Kare wa gaikokujin _____ , Nihon _____ rekishi _____ yoku shitte imasu.

彼は外国人 _____ 、日本 _____ 歴史 _____ よく知っています。

Although he's a foreigner, he knows Japanese history very well.

7. Kaimono _____ iki _____ , nani _____ kaimasen deshita.

買物 _____ 行き _____ 、何 _____ 買いませんでした。

Although I went shopping, I didn't buy anything.

Indicates that a list of two or more things or actions is not exhaustive.

toka (1) とか

93

Noun + toka + noun + toka

Depāto de kutsu **toka** sētā **toka** (o) kaimashita.

デパートで靴とかセーターとか（を）買いました。

I bought shoes, sweaters, and other things at the department store.

V-u + toka + V-u + toka

Yasumi ni wa tenisu o suru **toka** hon o yomu **toka** shimasu.

休みにはテニスをするとか本を読むとかします。

On holidays I do things like playing tennis or reading books.

Lists two or more actions in no particular sequence. (A single action may be listed as a representative of others.)

tari (1) たり

94

V-tari + V-tari + suru

Non**dari** tabetari odottari shita.

飲んだり食べたり踊ったりした。

We did things like drinking, eating, and dancing.

Fuyu ni wa onsen ni ittari shimasu.

冬には温泉に行ったりします。

In winter I do such things as going to hot springs.

Indicates actions or states that alternate.

tari (2) たり

95

V-tari + V-tari/-nakattari + suru

Hito ga ittari kitari shite iru.

人が行ったり来たりしている。

People are coming and going.

Tabako o suttari suwanakattari shimasu.

たばこを吸ったり吸わなかつたりします。

Sometimes I smoke, and sometimes I don't.

Adj-kattari + adj-kattari/-kunakattari + suru

Shiken wa muzukashikattari yasashikattari suru.

試験は難しかつたり易しかつたりする。

Exams are sometimes difficult and sometimes easy.

Tenki wa yokattari yokunakattari shita.

天気は良かつたり良くなかつたりした。

The weather was sometimes good and sometimes not good.

Noun + dattari + noun + dattari + suru

Nihongo no gakusei wa Amerikajin
dattari, Chūgokujin dattari suru.

日本語の学生はアメリカ人だったり、中國人だったりする。

Students of Japanese are sometimes American and sometimes Chinese.

Kare wa bengoshi dattari sakka
dattari suru.

彼は弁護士だったり作家だったりする。

Sometimes he is a lawyer and sometimes a writer.

Exercise 31 (93-95): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kurisumasu _____ haha _____ burausu _____ sukāfu _____ moraimashita.

クリスマス _____ 母 _____ ブラウス _____ スカーフ _____ もらいました。

For Christmas I received a blouse, a scarf, and other things from my mother.

2. Tomodachi _____ kyanpu _____ iku _____ umi _____ oyogu _____ shimasu.

友達 _____ キャンプ _____ 行く _____ 海 _____ 泳ぐ _____ します。

I do things like going camping or swimming in the sea with my friends.

3. Itaria _____ opera _____ mi _____ bijutsukan _____ it _____ shita.

イタリア _____ オペラ _____ 見 _____ 美術館 _____ 行つ _____ した。

In Italy we did things like seeing operas and visiting art museums.

4. Ie no mae _____ kuruma _____ it _____ ki _____ shite imasu.

家の前 _____ 車 _____ 行つ _____ 来 _____ しています。

Cars are coming and going in front of the house.

5. Kanji _____ tesuto wa muzukashikat _____ yasahikat _____ shimasu.

漢字 _____ テストは難しかつ _____ 易しかつ _____ します。

Kanji tests are sometimes difficult and sometimes easy.

6. Watashi-tachi _____ sensei wa Nihonjin dat _____ Amerikajin dat _____ suru.

私達 _____ 先生は日本人だつ _____ アメリカ人だつ _____ する。

Our teachers are sometimes Japanese and sometimes American.

V-u + noni

Sakubun o kaku **noni** wāpuro o tsukaimasu.

作文を書くのにワープロを使います。

I use a word processor to write compositions.

Shoppingu mōru wa kaimono o suru **noni** benri na tokoro desu.

ショッピングモールは買物をするのに便利な所です。

A shopping mall is a convenient place to shop.

In the form "no desu," indicates or asks an explanation or reason. Note that "n desu" is more colloquial.

Sentence + no + desu

"Naze ikanai **no** desu ka"

"Atama ga itai **no** desu."

「なぜ行かないのですか。」

「頭が痛いのです。」

"Why don't you go?"

"I have a headache."

"Dōshite tabenai **n** desu ka"

"Ima tabetakunai **n** desu."

「どうしてたべないんですか。」

「今食べたくないんです。」

"Why don't you eat?"

"I don't want to eat now."

Indicates a limit to an amount (replaceable by dake).

Number + counter + kiri

Asoko ni kuruma ga nidai **kiri** tomatte iru.

あそこに車が二台きり止まっている。

Only two cars are parked there.

Koko ni hon ga sansatsu **kiri** oite aru.

ここに本が三冊きり置いてある。

Only three books have been put here.

Exercise 32 (96–98): Follow the instructions below.

Put ni or noni in the blanks.

1. Oda-san wa hirugohan o tabe _____ uchi e kaerimasu.

小田さんは昼ご飯を食べ _____ うちへ帰ります。

Miss Oda goes home to have lunch.

2. Nihonjin wa taberu _____ hashi o tsukaimasu.

日本人は食べる _____ はしを使います。

Japanese people use chopsticks to eat.

3. Tomodachi ga shashin o mise _____ kita.

友達が写真を見せ _____ 来た。

My friend came to show me the photos.

4. Eigo o miseru _____ kono kyōshitsu o tsukaimasu.

映画を見せる _____ この教室を使います。

We use this classroom to show the movies.

5. Furui shinbun o yomi _____ toshokan e itta.

古い新聞を読み _____ 図書館へ行った。

I went to the library to read old newspapers.

6. Nihongo no shinbun o yomu _____ jisho ga irimasu.

日本語の新聞を読む _____ 辞書が要ります。

I need a dictionary to read Japanese newspapers.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Koko _____ kūkō _____ iku _____ dono _____ kakarimasu ka.

ここ _____ 空港 _____ 行く _____ どの _____ かかりますか。

How long does it take to get from here to the airport?

2. Kēki _____ tsukuru _____ nani _____ irimasu ka.

ケーキ _____ 作る _____ 何 _____ 要りますか。

What do you need to make a cake?

3. Kago _____ naka _____ orenji ga mittsu _____ arimasu.

かご _____ 中 _____ オレンジが三つ _____ あります。

There are only three oranges in the basket.

4. Watashi wa ichido _____ Wada _____ iu hito _____ shokuji _____ shita.

私は一度 _____ 和田 _____ いう人 _____ 食事 _____ した。

I had dinner only once with a person called Wada.

5. "Nani _____ shirabete iru _____ desu ka." "Kono dēta _____ machigai ga atta _____ desu."

「何 _____ 調べている _____ ですか。」「このデータ _____ 間違いがあった _____ です。」

"What are you checking?" "There were some errors in this data."

indicates the last time a certain incident occurred.

kiri (2) きり

99

Pronoun + kiri

Kare ni au no wa kore **kiri** desu.

彼に会うのはこれきりです。

This is the last time I will see him.

Yamada-san wa are **kiri** kimasen.

山田さんはあれきり来ません。

Miss Yamada hasn't come since then.

V-ta + kiri

Oda-san wa Kanada e itta **kiri** kaette kimasen.

小田さんはカナダへ行ったきり帰ってきません。

Mr. Oda went to Canada and has never come back.

Used with numbers and counters to mean "both" or "all."

tomo (1) とも

100

Number + counter + tomo

Kare no kuruma wa nidai **tomo** ōkii.

彼の車は二台とも大きい。

Both of his cars are big.

Watashi-tachi wa sannin **tomo** bengoshi desu.

私達は三人とも弁護士です。

All three of us are lawyers.

Number + counter + nagara

Kono ie wa nikken **nagara** furui desu.
この家は二軒ながら古いです。

Both of these houses are old.

Musuko wa sannin **nagara** isha da.
息子は三人ながら医者だ。

All of my three sons are doctors.

Exercise 33 (99–101): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Asagohan _____ tabeta _____ nani _____ tabete imasen.

朝ご飯 _____ 食べた _____ 何 _____ 食べていません。

I haven't eaten anything since I had breakfast.

2. Kare wa hachiji _____ ie _____ deta _____ mada kaerimasen.

彼は八時 _____ 家 _____ 出た _____ まだ帰りません。

He hasn't returned since he left house at eight o'clock.

3. Tomu to wa sengetsu Ginza _____ shokuji _____ shita _____ atte imasen.

トムとは先月銀座 _____ 食事 _____ した _____ 会っていません。

I haven't seen Tom since we had dinner in Ginza last month.

4. Hara-san _____ musuko-san wa futari _____ sensei _____ shite imasu.

原さん _____ 息子さんは二人 _____ 先生 _____ しています。

Both of Mrs. Hara's sons are teachers.

5. Watashi _____ yonda hon wa sansatsu _____ rekishi shōsetsu desu.

私 _____ 読んだ本は三冊 _____ 歴史小説です。

All three of the books that I read are historical novels.

6. Jisho _____ shirabeta _____ , kono kanji wa futatsu _____ chigatte imasu.

辞書 _____ 調べた _____ 、この漢字は二つ _____ 違っています。

When I checked in a dictionary, I found both of these kanji are wrong.

Used with a negative verb to indicate limits on conditions or quantities, with the sense of "only."

shika (1) しか

102

Noun/number with counter + shika + negative verb

Miki-san **shika** tabako o suimasen.

三木さんしかたばこを吸いません。

Only Mr. Miki smokes.

Tōsuto o ichimai **shika** tabenakatta.

トーストを一枚しか食べなかった。

I ate only one piece of toast.

Double particles de shika, made shika

Soko e wa basu **de shika** ikemasen.

そこへはバスでしか行けません。

You can go there only by bus.

Mise wa rokuji **made shika** aite imasen.

店は六時までしか開いていません。

The store is only open until six o'clock.

Used in the form "shika nai," indicates a restriction on the verb, with the sense of "to have no choice but to."

shika (2) しか

103

V-u + shika nai

Kyō wa isogashii kara, ashita iku **shika** arimasen.

今日は忙しいから、明日行くしかありません。

Because I'm busy today, I have no choice but to go tomorrow.

Sono koto wa sensei to sōdan suru **shika** nai.

その事は先生と相談するしかない。

As for that matter, you have no choice but to discuss with the teacher.

Used as a conjunction, indicates two or more actions or states.

shi (1) も

104

Verb + shi

Kare wa e mo kaku **shi**, shashin mo torimasu.

彼は絵も描くし、写真もとります。

He paints as well as takes photographs.

Eiga mo mita **shi**, kaimono mo shita.

映画も見たし、買物もした。

I saw a movie and went shopping.

Adjective + shi

Kono kōto wa yawarakai **shi**, iro mo kirei desu.

このコートは柔らかいし、色もきれいです。

This coat is soft and has a pretty color as well.

Adjectival noun + da + shi

Koko wa shizuka da **shi**, keshiki mo utsukushii.

ここは静かだし、景色も美しい。

This place is quiet, and what's more, the scenery is beautiful.

Exercise 34 (102–104): Follow the instructions below.

A. Select shika or dake for each sentence.

1. Watashi wa wain (shika/dake) nomimasen.

私はワイン（しか・だけ）飲みません。

I drink only wine.

2. Yamada-san (shika/dake) Eigo ga hanasemasu.

山田さん（しか・だけ）英語が話せます。

Only Mr. Yamada can speak English.

3. Soko e wa basu de (shika/dake) ikemasen.

そこへはバスで（しか・だけ）行けません。

You can go there only by bus.

4. Kinō no pātii ni Hara-sensei (shika/dake) kimashita.

昨日のパーティーに原先生（しか・だけ）来ました。

Only Prof. Hara came to yesterday's party.

5. Kono kutsu wa Honkon de (shika/dake) kaemasen.

この靴は香港で（しか・だけ）買えません。

You can buy these shoes only in Hong Kong.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kyōto _____ ikimashita _____, Kinkakuji _____ mimasen deshita.

京都_____ 行きました _____、金閣寺 _____ 見ませんでした。

I went to Kyoto, but I saw only Kinkakuji Temple.

2. Doyōbi _____ sūpā _____ niji _____ hatarakimasen.
土曜日 _____ スーパー _____ 二時 _____ 働きません。
As for Saturdays, I work only until two o'clock at the supermarket.

3. Kare ga kuru _____, koko _____ matsu _____ arimasen.
彼が来る _____、ここ _____ 待つ _____ ありません。
I have no choice but to wait here until he comes.

4. Kuruma ga nai _____, takushii _____ iku _____ nai.
車がない _____、タクシー _____ 行く _____ ない。
Having no car, I have no choice but to go by taxi.

5. Kanojo wa piano _____ hiku _____, uta _____ utaimasu.
彼女はピアノ _____ 弾く _____、歌 _____ 歌います。
She plays the piano and sings songs as well.

6. Ryokō _____ iku _____ sūtsu _____ hoshii _____ kutsu _____ hoshii.
旅行 _____ 行く _____ スーツ _____ 欲しい _____ 靴 _____ 欲しい。
I want a suit and shoes as well to go on the trip.

Used as a conjunction, indicates a reason.

shi (2)

105

Verb + shi

Ashita shiken ga aru **shi**, konban asobi ni ikemasen.

明日試験があるし、今晚遊びに行けません。

I have an examination tomorrow, so I can't go out (for fun) tonight.

Ame ga futta **shi**, kinō no pikunikku wa tanoshikunakatta.

雨が降ったし、昨日のピクニックは楽しくなかった。

It rained, so yesterday's picnic wasn't enjoyable.

Adjective + shi

Ano mise wa ryōri wa oishii **shi** yasui **shi**, yoku hayatte iru.

あの店は料理はおいしいし安いし、よくはやっている。

That restaurant is very popular, because the food is tasty, and what's more, it's inexpensive.

Adjectival noun + da + shi

Koko wa shizuka da **shi**, yoku nemurareru.

ここは静かだし、よく眠られる。

It's quiet here, so I can sleep well.

Noun + tomo (de)

Gopāsento no tesūryō **tomo** (de)
hyakudoru haratta.

5パーセントの手数料とも(で) 100ドル
払った。

I paid 100 dollars, including a five
percent commission.

Zeikin to sābisuryō **tomo** (de)
ichiman gosen'en ni narimasu.

税金とサービス料とも(で) 一万五千円に
なります。

It amounts to 15,000 yen, including the
tax and service charge.

Indicates the one acting in a passive or
causative-passive sentence, or the one acted
upon, in a causative sentence.

Noun (actor) + ni + passive verb

Watashi wa sensei **ni** shikarareta.

私は先生に叱られた。

I was scolded by my teacher.

Kare wa dorobō **ni** jitensha o
nusumareta.

彼は泥棒に自転車を盗まれた。

He had his bike stolen by a thief.

Kanojo wa neko **ni** sakana o
taberareta.

彼女は猫に魚を食べられた。

She had her fish eaten by a cat.

Noun (acted upon) + ni + causative verb

Sensei wa gakusei **ni** hon o yomaseru.

先生は学生に本を読ませる。

The teacher makes students read
books.

Noun (actor) + ni + causative-passive verb

Kare wa tomodachi **ni** sake o
nomaserareta.

彼は友達に酒を飲ませられた。

He was made to drink sake by his
friends.

Exercise 35 (105–107): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Sanji _____ hima da _____, doko ka _____ ikimashō ka.

三時 _____ 暇だ _____、どこか _____ 行きましょうか。

We are free after three o'clock, so shall we go somewhere?

2. Kono ka wa muzukashii _____, taisetsu da _____, nando _____ fukushū shita.

この課は難しい _____、大切だ _____、何度も _____ 復習した。

Because this chapter is difficult and, moreover, important, I reviewed it many times.

3. Ano resutoran _____ shokujii _____ suru _____, sabisuryō _____ hitori ichiman'en _____ kakaru.

あのレストラン _____ 食事 _____ する _____、サービス料 _____ 一人一万円 _____かかる。

If you have dinner at that restaurant, it costs as much as 10,000 yen per person including the service charge.

4. Nido _____ shukudai _____ wasureta _____, sensei _____ shikarareta.

二度 _____ 宿題 _____ 忘れた _____、先生 _____ 指られた。

Because I forgot my homework twice, I was scolded by the teacher.

5. Sensei wa gakusei _____ Nihongo _____ hanasase _____, kanji _____ kakase _____ suru.

先生は学生 _____ 日本語 _____ 話させ _____、漢字 _____ 書かせ _____ する。

The teacher makes students do things like speak in Japanese, write kanji, and so forth.

6. Watashi wa neko _____ chichi _____ tsutta sakana _____ taberareta.

私は猫 _____ 父 _____ 釣った魚 _____ 食べられた。

I had the fish that my father caught eaten by a cat.

7. Watashi-tachi wa kachō _____ rokuji _____ shigoto _____ sascerareta.

私達は課長 _____ 六時 _____ 仕事 _____ させられた。

We were made to work until six o'clock by the section chief.

Indicates uncertainty about a state or reason.

ka (4) カ

108

Verb/adjective + deshō/darō + ka

Sumisu-san wa kuru deshō **ka**.

スマスさんは来るでしょうか。

I wonder if Mr. Smith is coming.

Soto wa samui darō **ka**.

外は寒いだろうか。

I wonder if it's cold outside.

Verb/adjective + no + ka

Shiken ga aru no **ka** — Jimu wa yoku benkyō shite imasu.

試験があるのかジムはよく勉強しています。

I wonder if Jim is going to have an exam.
— he's studying hard.

Nedan ga takai no **ka** — kono shinamono wa amari urenai.

値段が高いのかこの品物はあまり売れない。

I wonder if the price is high — this article
doesn't sell well.

109

か ka (5)

Indicates a question embedded in sentence.

Interrogative + (particle) + verb + ka

Kaigi wa itsu aru **ka** oboete imasen.

会議はいつあるか覚えていません。

I don't remember when the meeting will
be held.

Kare wa nanji ni kuru **ka** wakarimasen.

彼は何時に来るか分かりません。

I can't tell what time he'll come.

Verb/adjective + ka + dō + ka

Kare ga kuru **ka** dō **ka** shirimasesen.

彼が来るかどうか知りません。

I don't know whether he'll come or not.

Kore ga takai **ka** dō **ka** shiranai.

これがいかどうか知らない。

I don't know whether this is expensive
or not.

110

だの dano (1)

Indicates two or more items or actions of a longer list (replaceable by toka).

Noun + dano + noun + dano

Kanojo wa inu **dano** neko **dano** (o)
katte iru.

彼女は犬だの猫だの（を）飼っている。

She keeps a dog, a cat, and other
animals.

V-u + dano + V-u + dano

Nomu **dano** taberu **dano** odoru **dano**
shita.

飲むだの食べるだの踊るだのした。

We did things like drinking, eating, dancing,
and so on.

Exercise 36 (108-110): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Asonde _____ ite, kare wa daigaku _____ haireru deshō _____ .

遊んで _____ いて、彼は大学 _____ 入れるでしょう _____ 。

He does nothing but play; I wonder if he can get into college.

2. Mukō no michi _____ jiko ga atta no _____ , kuruma ga nandai _____ kono michi _____ tōru.

向こうの道 _____ 事故があつたの _____ 、車が何台 _____ この道 _____ 通る。

I wonder if there's an accident on that street; lots of cars are using (passing along) this street.

3. Yūbe nanji _____ kaisha _____ deta _____ oboete imasen.

昨夜何時 _____ 会社 _____ 出た _____ 覚えていません。

I don't remember what time I left the company last night.

4. Ano mise _____ kēki ga oishii _____ dō _____ shirimasesen.

あの店 _____ ケーキがおいしい _____ どう _____ 知りません

I don't know whether the cakes at that store are tasty or not.

5. Watashi wa Wada-san _____ hon _____ kaeshita _____ dō _____ oboete inai.

私は和田さん _____ 本 _____ 返した _____ どう _____ 覚えていない。

I don't remember whether I returned the book to Miss Wada or not.

6. Kanojo wa tori _____ inu _____ neko _____ kau _____ ga suki desu.

彼女は鳥 _____ 犬 _____ 猫 _____ 飼う _____ が好きです。

She likes keeping birds, dogs, and cats.

7. Kodomo-tachi wa dōbutsuen _____ iku _____ kōen _____ asobu _____ shita.

子供達は動物園 _____ 行く _____ 公園 _____ 遊ぶ _____ した。

Children did things like go to the zoo and play in the park.

111

だの dano (2)

Verb + dano + verb (negative/opposite) + dano

Kanojo wa iku **dano** ikanai **dano**
(to) itte iru.

彼女は行くだの行かないだの（と）
言っている。

She says that she's going and then that
she's not going.

Indicates a pair of opposite actions or states.

**Adjective + dano + adjective
(negative/opposite) + dano**

Kare wa samui **dano** atsui **dano** (to)
itte soto e demasen.

彼は寒いだの暑いだの（と）言って外へ
出ません。

Saying that it's (too) cold, then that it's
(too) hot, he doesn't go outside.

112

など nado (2)

Sentence + nado

Kare wa gakkō o yameru **nado** to
itte iru.

彼は学校を辞めるなどと言っている。

He says something to the effect that he
is quitting school.

Used for the expression "something to the
effect" (replaceable by to ka).

Kanojo wa eiga wa tsumaranakatta
nado to itte ita.

彼女は映画はつまらなかつたなどと言つ
ていた。

She said something to the effect that
the movie was boring.

113

やら yara (1)

Noun + yara + noun + yara

Depāto de kutsu **yara** sētā **yara**
takusan katta.

デパートで靴やらセーターやら沢山買った。

I bought a lot of things — shoes,
sweaters, and so on — at the
department store.

Indicates two or more items of a longer list
(replaceable by toka or dano).

Haha wa kaimono **yara** sōji **yara** de
isogashii.

母は買物やら掃除やらで忙しい。

What with shopping, cleaning, and the
like, my mother is busy.

Exercise 37 (1)–(13): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kare wa hikōki _____ Fujisan _____ mieta _____ mienakatta _____ itte ita.

彼は飛行機 _____ 富士山 _____ 見えた _____ 見えなかつた _____ 言っていた。

He said that he could, then couldn't see Mt. Fuji from the airplane.

2. Hara-san wa isogashii _____ isogashikunai _____ itte ita _____, kyō kuru _____ dō _____ wakaranai.

原さんは忙しい _____ 忙しくない _____ 言っていた _____ 、今日来る _____ どう _____ 分からない。

Mr. Hara said that he was busy and then that he wasn't, so I can't tell whether he'll come today or not.

3. Gakusei wa kyō _____ shiken _____ kinō no _____ yasashikatta _____ to itte ita.

学生は今日 _____ 試験 _____ 昨日の _____ 易しかつた _____ と言っていた。

The students said something to the effect that today's examination was easier than yesterday's.

4. Buchō wa kaigi _____ enkai _____ de kono kinyōbi _____ isogashii.

部長は会議 _____ 宴会 _____ でこの金曜日 _____ 忙しい。

What with meetings, banquets, and so on, the department head is busy until this Friday.

5. Gaikogugo _____ narau _____ , tekisuto _____ , jisho _____ , tēpu _____ takusan iru.

外国語 _____ 習う _____ 、テキスト _____ 、辞書 _____ テープ _____ 沢山要る。

In order to learn foreign languages, we need materials such as texts, dictionaries, and tapes.

Indicates uncertainty (replaceable by *ka*).

yara (2) やら

114

Interrogative + *yara*

Hako no naka ni nani **yara** arimasu.

箱の中に何やらあります。

There is something in the box.

Dare **yara** kimashita.

だれやら来ました。

Someone came.

Noun + yara + noun + yara

Ame **yara** kiri **yara** wakarimasen.

雨やら霧やら分かりません。

I can't tell whether it's rain or fog.

Ano hito wa sensei **yara** gakusei **yara** wakaranai.

あの人は先生やら学生やら分からぬ。

I can't tell whether he is a teacher or a student.

**Verb/adj. + yara + verb/adj.
(negative/opposite) + yara**

Kare wa kuru **yara** konai **yara** shirimasen.

彼は来るやら来ないやら知りません。

I don't know whether he'll come or not.

Sono tsutsumi wa omoi **yara** karui **yara** wakaranai.

その包みは重いやら軽いやら分からぬ。

I don't know whether the package is heavy or light.

115

ても te mo (4)

Indicates an approximate limit, with the sense of "at the most."

Adj-ku + te mo

Kōgi wa nagakute **mo** nijikan gurai darō.

講義は長くとも二時間ぐらいだろう。

The lecture would last two hours at the most.

Kamera wa takakute **mo** sanman'en hodo deshō.

カメラは高くとも三万円ほどでしょう。

The camera would cost about 30,000 yen at the most.

116

とも tomo (3)

Indicates an approximate maximum or minimum.

Adj-ku + tomo

Kore wa sukunaku **tomo** gosen'en ijō deshō.

これは少なくとも五千円以上でしょう。

This would cost more than 5,000 yen at least.

Gaikoku no baiyā wa ōku **tomo** rokujūnin gurai datta darō.

外国のバイヤーは多くとも六十人ぐらいだっただろう。

The (number of) foreign buyers was about sixty at most.

Exercise 38 (114–116): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Ano michi _____ aruite iru _____ wa otoko _____ onna _____ wakaranai.

あの道 _____ 歩いている _____ は男 _____ 女 _____ 分からない。

I can't tell whether the one walking along that road is a man or a woman.

2. Kaigi ga nanji _____ hajimaru _____ dare _____ shirimasesan.

会議が何時 _____ 始まる _____ だれ _____ 知りません。

No one knows what time the meeting will start.

3. Kare _____ tsutta sakana ga ōkikatta _____ chiisakatta _____ oboete inai.

彼 _____ 鈎った魚が大きかった _____ 小さかった _____ 覚えていない。

I don't remember whether the fish he caught was big or small.

4. Sono kōjō wa tōku _____ koko _____ sanjū-mairu _____ deshō.

その工場は遠く _____ ここ _____ 三十マイル _____ でしょう。

The factory is about 30 miles from here at the most.

5. Kono daigaku _____ Nihongo _____ gakusei wa ōku _____ hyakunin _____ deshō.

この大学 _____ 日本語 _____ 学生は多く _____ 百人 _____ でしょう。

The (number of) students of Japanese in this university is about 100 at most.

6. Kono shigoto _____ sumaseru _____ sukunaku _____ isshūkan kakarimasu.

この仕事 _____ 決める _____ 少なく _____ 一週間かかります。

It will take at least a week to finish this work.

Indicates that a number is the highest or lowest limit.

wa (3) は

117

Number + wa

Kono jisho wa ichiman'en **wa** suru.

この辞書は一万円はする。

This dictionary costs at least 10,000 yen.

Kono kabin wa gosen'en **wa** shinai.

この花瓶は五千円はしない。

This flower vase couldn't cost any more than 5,000 yen.

Number + to + negative verb

Eki made aruite gofun **to** kakaranai.
駅まで歩いて五分とかからない。

It won't take even five minutes to get
to the station on foot.

Ano mise de wa nido **to** kaitakunai.
あの店では二度と買いたくない。

I don't want to shop at that store ever
again.

Noun + nado

Watashi wa bara **nado** suki desu.
私はばらなど好きです。

I like things like roses.

Konban no shokuji wa Furansu ryōri
nado dō desu ka.
今晚の食事はフランス料理などどうですか。

For tonight's dinner, how about French
cuisine or something like that?

Exercise 39 (117-119): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kore wa ano mise _____ kae _____, gohyakuen _____ shinai deshō.

これはあの店 _____ 買え _____、五百円 _____ しないでしょう。

If you buy it at that store, it won't cost even 500 yen.

2. Kono tsutsumi wa chiisai desu _____, jukkiro _____ shimasu.

この包みは小さいです _____、10キロ _____ します。

This package is small, but it weighs at least ten kilograms.

3. Ryokō _____ iku _____, ikkagetsu _____ ikitai.

旅行 _____ 行く _____、一ヶ月 _____ 行きたい。

If I go on a trip, I like to go for at least one month.

4. Basu _____ ikeba, hakubutsukan _____ nijuppen _____ kakaranai.

バス _____ 行けば、博物館 _____ 二十分 _____ からない。

If you go by bus, it won't take even 20 minutes to get to the museum.

5. Kanojo wa asoko e wa nido _____ ikitakunai _____ ii _____ , mata itta.

彼女はあそこへは二度 _____ 行きたくない _____ 言い _____ 、また行った。

Although she said that she'd never go there, she went again.

6. Purezento _____ kau _____ , Imariyaki _____ dō desu ka.

プレゼント _____ 買う _____ 、伊万里焼き _____ どうですか。

If you are to buy a present, how about something like Imari ware?

7. Issho ni shigoto _____ suru _____ , Hara-san _____ ii desu.

一緒に仕事 _____ する _____ 、原さん _____ いいです。

If I'm to work together with someone, I'd like someone like Miss Hara.

Indicates an extent of an action or condition
(gurai is more colloquial).

kurai (3) くらい

120

Noun + kurai

Hiragana **kurai** yomemasu.

ひらがなくらい読みます。

I can read as much as hiragana.

Verb/adjective + kurai

Nodo ga itaku naru **kurai** utatta.

のどが痛くなるくらい歌った。

I sang so much that my throat hurt.

Kodomo demo sore **kurai** dekimasu.

子供でもそれくらい出来ます。

Even a child can do that much.

Mada aki na noni mō samui **kurai** da.

まだ秋なのにもう寒いくらいだ。

Although it's still autumn, it's almost cold.

ほど hodo (3)

Indicates the extent of an action or condition
(replaceable by kurai/gurai).

Verb/adjective + hodo

Biru wa shinbun ga yomeru **hodo** kanji o shitte iru.

ビルは新聞が読めるほど漢字を知っている。

Bill knows kanji so well, he can read a newspaper.

Okirarenai **hodo** tsukarete imasu.

起きられないほど疲れています。

I'm so tired that I can't get up.

Kaze ga tsuyokute ki ga taoreta **hodo** deshita.

風が強くて木が倒れたほどでした。

The wind was so strong that a tree fell down.

Samukute koto ga hoshii **hodo** datta.

寒くてコートが欲しいほどだった。

It was so cold that I wanted a coat.

ほど hodo (4)

Indicates a relationship, with the sense of "the more ... the more..."

V-ba + V-u + hodo

Renshū sureba suru **hodo** jōzu ni naru.

練習すればするほど上手になる。

The more you practice, the better you become.

Adj-kereba + adj-i + hodo

Hayakereba hayai **hodo** ii desu.

早ければ早いほどいいです。

The sooner, the better.

Exercise 40 (120-122): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kodomo _____ sonna koto _____ shitte imasu.

子供 _____ そんな事 _____ 知っています。

Even a child knows as much as that.

2. Jisho _____ areba, kono hon _____ yomemasu.

辞書 _____ あれば、この本 _____ 読めます。

As long as I have a dictionary, I can read something as difficult as this book.

3. Biru _____ nonda _____, shinbun _____ yomenai _____ nemuku natta.

ビール _____ 飲んだ _____、新聞 _____ 読めない _____ 眠くなつた。

I drank beer, so I became so sleepy that I couldn't read the newspaper.

4. Jimu wa Nihonjin _____ hanaseru _____ Nihongo _____ jōzu _____ natta.

ジムは日本人 _____ 話せる _____ 日本語 _____ 上手 _____ なつた。

Jim became so good at Japanese that he can speak with a native Japanese.

5. Mire _____ miru _____ sono e _____ hoshiku natta.

見れ _____ 見る _____ その絵 _____ 欲しくなつた。

The more I looked at it, the more I wanted the picture.

6. Kore wa chiisakere _____ chiisai _____ tsukau _____ benri desu.

これは小さけれ _____ 小さい _____ 使う _____ 便利です。

The smaller it is, the more convenient it is to use.

Indicates an extent or amount to mean
"as ... as..."

dake (3) だけ

123

V-u + dake

Arukero **dake** aruita.

歩けるだけ歩いた。

I walked as much as I could.

Nihongo wa naraeru **dake** naraitai.

日本語は習えるだけ習いたい。

I want to learn as much Japanese

I can.

V-tai/hoshii/suki na + dake

Nomitai **dake** nonda.

飲みたいだけ飲んだ。

I drank as much as I wanted.

Hoshii **dake** totte kudasai.

欲しいだけ取って下さい。

Please take as much as you like.

Suki na **dake** terebi o mita.

好きなだけテレビを見た。

I watched TV as much as I wanted.

だけ dake (4)

Indicates a relationship with the sense of "the more... the more..." (replaceable by hodo).

V-ba + V-u + dake

Tabereba taberu **dake** futorimasu.

食べれば食べるだけ太ります。

The more you eat, the fatter you become.

Adj-kerebe + adj-i + dake

Yasukereba yasui **dake** yoku ureru.

安ければ安いだけよく売れる。

The cheaper it is, the better it sells.

と to (8)

Used to mean "about to do something" or "trying (often unsuccessfully) to do something."

V-ō/yō + to + suru

Dekakeyō **to** shita toki, denwa ga natta.

出かけようとした時、電話が鳴った。

When I was about to leave, the telephone rang.

Tatō **to** shita ga tatenakatta.

立とうとしたが立てなかった。

I tried to stand up, but I couldn't.

Neko ga sakana o torō **to** shite iru.

猫が魚を取ろうとしている。

A cat is trying to get the fish.

Exercise 4! (123–125): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kore wa tsukaeru _____ tsukatta _____, atarashii _____ ga hoshii desu.

これは使える _____ 使った _____ 、新しい _____ が欲しいです。

Because I used this as much as I could, I want a new one.

2. Toshokan _____ hon _____ karitai _____ karite kita.

図書館 _____ 本 _____ 借りたい _____ 借りてきた。

I borrowed as many books as I wanted from the library.

3. Tsuri _____ dekakeru _____, hayakere _____ hayai _____ ii deshō.

釣り _____ 出かける _____ 、早けれ _____ 早い _____ いいでしょう。

If we are to go fishing, the earlier the better.

4. Karē _____ totta shashin wa mire _____ miru _____ omoshiroi.

彼 _____ とった写真は見れ _____ 見る _____ 面白い。

That photo he took — the more I look at it, the funnier it seems..

5. Heya _____ hairō _____ shita _____ , doa _____ akanakatta.

部屋 _____ 入ろう _____ した _____ 、ドア _____ 開かなかつた。

I tried to enter the room but the door didn't open.

6. Densha _____ oriyō _____ shita toki, ushiro _____ dare ka _____ yobareta.

電車 _____ 降りよう _____ した時、後ろ _____ だれか _____ 呼ばれた。

When I was about to get off the train, I was called after by someone.

Lists conditions in spite of which the main verb is true, with the sense of "even if" or "whether... or not."

to (9)



126

V-ō/-yō + to ... V-ō/-yō + to

Arashi ga koyō **to** kōzui ga koyō **to**,
kono ie wa anzen da.

あらしが来ようと洪水が来ようと、この家は安全だ。

Even if a storm comes or a flood comes, this house is safe.

Shōsetsu o kakō **to** shi o kakō **to** kare
no hon wa yoku uremasu.

小説を書こうと詩を書こうと、彼の本はよく売れます。

Whether he writes novels or poems, his books sell well.

V-ō/V-yō + to + V-mai + to

Ame ga furō **to** furumai **to**, ikimasu.

雨が降ろうと降るまいと、行きます。

Whether it rains or not, I'll go.

Adj-karō + to + adj-karō + to

Yokarō **to** warukarō **to** kaimasen.

良かろうと悪かろうと買いません。

Whether it's good or bad, I won't buy it.

なり nari (1)

Indicates a choice, with the sense of "either..." or "whether...or."

Noun + nari + noun + nari

Oda-san **nari** watashi **nari** ga kaigi ni shusseki shimasu.

小田さんなり私なりが会議に出席します。

Either Mr. Oda or I will attend the meeting.

V-u + nari + V-u + nari

Iku **nari** yameru **nari** hayaku kimemashō.

行くなり止めるなり早く決めましょう。

Let's decide quickly whether we are going or not.

なり nari (2)

Used with an interrogative word to mean "anything," "anyone," any time," etc.

Interrogative + nari + to

Nan **nari** to itte kudasai.

何なりと言つて下さい。

Please say anything.

Dare **nari** to kikinasai.

だれなりと聞きなさい。

Ask anyone.

Itsu **nari** to kite kudasai.

いつなりと来て下さい。

Please come any time.

Doko **nari** to ikinasai.

どこなりと行きなさい。

Go anywhere.

Exercise 42 (126-128): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Atsukarō _____ samukarō _____, kodomo-tachi wa kōen _____ asonde iru.

暑かろう _____ 寒かろう _____、子供達は公園 _____ 遊んでいる。

Whether it's hot or cold, children are playing in the park.

2. Kachō _____ ikō _____ buchō _____ ikō _____, watashi wa ikenai.

課長 _____ 行こう _____ 部長 _____ 行こう _____、私は行けない。

Even if the section chief or the department head goes, I can't go.

3. Wakaranakere _____, sensci ni kiku _____ jisho _____ shiraberu _____ nasai.

分からなければ _____、先生に聞く _____ 辞書 _____ 調べる _____ なさい。

If you don't understand, ask your teacher or check in a dictionary.

4. Sono koto _____, Oda-san _____ Miki san _____ ni itte kudasai.

その事 _____、小田さん _____ 三木さん _____ に言って下さい。

As for this matter, please tell either Mr. Oda or Mr. Miki.

5. Kono shigoto wa hitori _____ dekiru _____, itsu _____ to kactte kudasai.

この仕事は一人 _____ 出来る _____、いつ _____ と帰って下さい。

I can do this work by myself, so please go home any time.

6. Kono naka _____ dore _____ to suki na _____ o torinasai.

この中 _____ どれ _____ と好きな _____ を取りなさい。

Take whichever you like among these.

Emphasizes the word preceding it.

koso (1)

こそ

129

Noun + koso

Rainen **koso** Igirisu e ikitai desu.

来年こそイギリスへ行きたいです。

Next year for sure, I'd like to go to England.

Sumisu-san **koso** gorufu ga jōzu desu.

スマスさんこそゴルフが上手です。

Mr. Smith is a good golfer indeed.

Double particles de koso, to koso

Kare wa Nihon **de koso** yūmei desu.

彼は日本でこそ有名です。

Japan is certainly a place he is famous.

Hara-san **to koso** tenisu o shitai.

原さんとこそテニスをしたい。

Miss Hara is the very person I want to play tennis with.

Emphasizes a reason or cause.

koso (2)

こそ

130

V-ba/adj-kereba + koso

O-kane ga ireba **koso**, yoru mo hataraite iru no desu.

お金が要ればこそ、夜も働いているのです。

It's because I really need the money that I'm working nights as well.

Wakakereba **koso**, anna kiken na koto ga dekiru no da.

若ければこそ、あんな危険な事が出来るのだ。

It's only because he's young that he can do such a dangerous thing.

Sentence + kara + koso

Sono miso wa sabisu ga ii kara **koso**,
o-kyaku ga ōi n desu.

その店はサービスがいいからこそ、お客様
が多いんです。

It precisely because the service in that
store is so good that it has a lot of
customers.

Kanojo wa yoku benkyō shita kara
koso, daigaku ni kaireta no desu.

彼女はよく勉強したからこそ、大学に入
れたのです。

Her diligent study was what got her
into college.

131

では te wa (2)

Indicates repetition of an action

V-te + wa

Kare wa keiba ni itte **wa** kane o
nakushite iru.

彼は競馬に行っては金をなくしている。

Every time he goes to a horse race, he
loses money.

V-te + wa ... V-te + wa + suru

Gakusei ga kokuban ni kanji o kaite
wa keshi, kaite **wa** keshi shite iru.

学生が黒板に漢字を書いては消し、書いて
は消ししている。

The student writes kanji on the
blackboard, erases them, then writes and
erases them again.

Exercise 43 (129–131): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kore _____ watashi _____ nani _____ hoshikatta mono desu.

これ _____ 私 _____ 何 _____ 欲しかった物です。

It is the very thing that I wanted more than anything.

2. Shiken ga owatta _____ , konban _____ asobi _____ ikitai.

試験が終わった _____ 、今晚 _____ 遊び _____ 行きたい。

The examination is over, so I would like to go out for fun tonight for sure.

3. Tōkyō _____ oishii sushi _____ taberareru.

東京 _____ おいしいすし _____ 食べられる。

Tokyo is certainly a place where you can eat good sushi.

4. Bosu _____ byōki _____ ikenakatta kara _____, watashi _____ itta n desu.

バス _____ 病気 _____ 行けなかつたから _____、私 _____ 行つたんです。

It was because my boss couldn't go due to an illness that I went.

5. Daigaku _____ hairitakereba _____, kare wa ichinichi _____ nanjikan _____ benkyō shite iru no desu.

大学 _____ 入りたければ _____、彼は一日 _____ 何時間 _____ 勉強しているのです。

It is only because he wants to get into college that he studies many hours a day.

6. Kanojo wa toshokan _____ it _____ hon _____ nansatsu _____ karite kuru.

彼女は図書館 _____ 行つ _____ 本 _____ 何冊 _____ 借りてくる。

Every time she goes to the library, she takes out many books.

Joins two or more nouns to indicate a list of items (replaceable by **to**).

ni (11) 

132

Noun + ni + noun

Shussekisha wa Wada-san **ni** Hara-san deshita.

出席者は和田さんに原さんでした。

Those present were Mr. Wada and Miss Hara.

Enkai de wain **ni** uisukii **ni** sake ga deta.

宴会でワインにウイスキーに酒が出た。

At the banquet, wine, whisky, and sake were served.

Connects two or more items to indicate a matching or contrasting.

ni (12) 

133

Noun + ni + noun

Romeo **ni** Jurietto

ロメオにジュリエット

Romeo and Juliet.

midori no matsu **ni** aoi sora

緑の松に青い空

the green pines and the blue sky

Fuji-san **ni** sakura

富士山に桜

Mt. Fuji and cherry blossoms

kuro no sūtsu **ni** kuro no nekutai

黒のスーツに黒のネクタイ

a black suit and a black tie

Noun + ni shite wa

Kare wa Amerika-jin **ni shite wa** se ga hikui.
彼はアメリカ人にしては背が低い。

He's short for an American.

Verb + ni shite wa

Yoku nomu **ni shite wa** yowanai.
よく飲むにしては酔わない。

Considering that he drinks a lot, he doesn't get drunk.

Exercise 44 (132–134): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kanji _____ yom eru _____ wa Tomu _____ Jimu _____ Sara desu.

漢字 _____ 読める _____ はトム _____ ジム _____ サラです。

Those who can read kanji are Tom, Jim and Sarah.

2. Watashi _____ tsukutta ningyō wa kore _____ sore desu.

私 _____ 作った人形はこれ _____ それです。

The dolls that I made are this one and that one.

3. Akai sētā _____ kuroi sukāto _____ onna no ko _____ kuruma _____ orita.

赤いセーター _____ 黒いスカート _____ 女の子 _____ 車 _____ 降りた。

A girl in a red sweater and a black skirt got out of the car.

4. Kabe _____ Fujisan _____ sakura _____ e _____ hatte arimasu.

壁 _____ 富士山 _____ 桜 _____ 総 _____ はってあります。

A picture of Mt. Fuji and cherry blossoms is pasted to the wall.

5. Yamada-san wa Nihonjin _____ Eigo _____ jōzu desu.

山田さんは日本人 _____ 英語 _____ 上手です。

For a Japanese, Mr. Yamada is good at English.

6. Kare wa jūen Nihon _____ ita _____ Nihongo _____ amari hanasenai.

彼は十年日本 _____ いた _____ 日本語 _____ あまり話せない。

Considering that he was in Japan ten years, he can't speak Japanese very well.

Indicates an effect on or value of a person or thing.

ni totte (に) にとって

135

Noun + ni totte

Yasai wa karada **ni totte** ii desu.

野菜は体にとっていいです。

Vegetables are good for the body.

Sono eiga wa kodomo **ni totte**

yokunai to omoimasu.

その映画は子供にとって良くないと思います。

I think that movie is not good for children.

Double particles ni totte wa, ni totte mo

Kono zasshi wa dansei **ni totte wa**
yaku ni tatsu.

この雑誌は男性にとって役に立つ。

This magazine is useful for men (but not for women).

Kono gēmu wa otona **ni totte mo**
omoshiroi desu.

このゲームは大人にとっても面白いです。

This game is fun for adults, too.

Used to indicate "about" or "concerning" something or someone.

ni tsuite (について)

136

Noun + ni tsuite

Nihon no keizai **ni tsuite** hanashite
kudasai.

日本の経済について話して下さい。

Please talk about the Japanese economy.

Kyō no kōgi **ni tsuite** nani ka shitsumon
ga arimasuka.

今日の講義について何か質問がありますか？

Are there any questions about today's lecture?

Double particles ni tsuite no, ni tsuite wa

Tōshi **ni tsuite no** hon ga takusan
dete iru.

投資についての本が沢山出ている。

Many books about investments are out.

Kono ken **ni tsuite wa** tsugi no kaigi
de sōdan shimashō.

この件については次の会議で相談しましょう。

Concerning this matter, let's discuss it at next meeting.

Noun + tomo + noun + tomo

Kono sakuhin wa kessaku **tomo** dasaku **tomo** iemasen.

この作品は傑作とも駄作とも言えません。

I can't tell whether this work is a masterpiece or trash.

Kono shinju wa honmono **tomo** nisemono **tomo** ienai.

この真珠は本物とも、にせ物とも言えない。

I can't tell whether this pearl is the real thing or an imitation.

Verb/Adj. + tomo + verb/adj + tomo

Bukka ga agaru **tomo** sagaru **tomo** iemasen.

物価が上がるとも下がるとも言えません。

I can't say whether prices will go up or go down.

Sono geki wa ii **tomo** warui **tomo** ienai.

その劇はいいとも悪いとも言えない。

I can't say whether the play is good or bad.

Exercise 45 (135–137): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Gaikokujin _____ kanji _____ kaku _____ wa muzukashii.

外国人 _____ 漢字 _____ 書く _____ は難しい。

Writing kanji is difficult for foreigners.

2. Karui undō wa otona _____ kodomo _____ taisetsu desu.

軽い運動は大人 _____ 子供 _____ 大切です。

Light exercise is important both for adults and children.

3. Kare wa suraido _____ mise _____ , ryōkō _____ hanashita.

彼はスライド _____ 見せ _____ 、旅行 _____ 話した。

He talked about his trip while showing the slides.

4. Kono tōshi _____ Miki-san _____ sōdan suru _____ ga ichiban ii darō.

この投資 _____ 三木さん _____ 相談する _____ が一番いいだろう。

Concerning this investment, it's best to consult with Mr. Kiki.

5. Kono hon wa katta _____ da _____ , mada ii _____ warui _____ iemasen.

この本は買った _____ だ _____ 、まだいい _____ 悪い _____ 言えません。

I just bought this book, so I can't say yet whether it's good or bad.

6. Kore wa nando _____ yonda _____, shi _____ shōsetsu _____ icanai.

これは何度 _____ 読んだ _____ 、詩 _____ 小説 _____ 言えない。

I read this many times, but I can't tell whether it's a poem or a story.

Lists conditions in spite of which the main verb is true, with the sense of "even if" or "whether...or not" (replaceable by to).

ga (6) が

138

V-ō / -yō + ga ... V-ō/-yō + ga

Ame ga furō **ga** yuki ga furō **ga**,
watashi wa ikimasu.
雨が降ろうが雪が降ろうが、私は行きます。
Even if it rains or snows, I'll go.

Shikenga arō **ga** shukudai ga arō **ga**,
ano gakusei wa benkyō shinai.
試験があろうが宿題があろうが、あの学生
は勉強しない。
Even if he has examinations or
homework, that student doesn't study.

V-ō/-yō + ga + V-mai + ga

Kare ga koyō **ga** komai **ga**, kaigi o
hajimemashō.
彼が来ようが来まいが、会議を始めま
しょう。
Whether he comes or not, let's start
the meeting.

Adj-karō + ga + adj-karō + ga

Heya ga hirokarō **ga** semakarō **ga**
kamaimasen.
部屋が広かろうが狭かろうがかまいません。
It doesn't matter whether the room is
large or small.

Emphasizes contrasting elements.

wa (4) わ

139

V(-masu) + wa + suru

Bā de nomi **wa** shita ga, shokuji ni wa
ikanakatta.
バーで飲みはしたが、食事には行かな
かった。
We did drink at the bar, but didn't go
out for dinner.

V-te + wa + iru

Kamera o motte **wa** iru ga, mada
tsukatte (wa) inai.
カメラを持ってはいるが、まだ使って
(は) いない。
I do have a camera, but haven't used it
yet.

Noun + toshite

Kare wa tsūyaku **toshite** yatowareta.

彼は通訳として雇われた。

He was hired as an interpreter.

Kono heya wa shosai **toshite** tsukatte iranai.

この部屋は書斎として使っている。

I'm using this room as a study.

Exercises 46 (138–140): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kare ga koyō _____ komai _____, sanji _____ koko _____ machimashō.

彼が来よう _____ 来まい _____、三時 _____ ここ _____ 待ちましょう。

Whether he comes or not, let's wait here until three o'clock.

2. Takakarō _____ yasukarō _____, iru _____ kainasai.

高かろう _____ 安かろう _____、要る _____ 買いなさい。

Whether it's expensive or inexpensive, buy it if you need it.

3. Jimu wa kanji _____ yome _____ shimasu ga, kake _____ shimasen.

ジムは漢字 _____ 読め _____ しますが、書け _____ しません。

Jim can read kanji, but he can't write them.

4. Karc _____ hanashi _____ shita ga, sanjuppun _____ hanasanakatta.

彼 _____ 話し _____ したが、三十分 _____ 話さなかった。

I did talk with him, but only for 30 minutes.

5. Kanojo wa ucitoresu _____ hataraki _____ kono shōsetsu _____ kaita.

彼女はウェイトレス _____ 働き _____ この小説 _____ 書いた。

She wrote this novel while working as a waitress.

6. Tsukue _____ nai _____, kono hako _____ tsukue _____ tsukatte imasu.

机 _____ ない _____、この箱 _____ 机 _____ 使っています。

Because there's no desk, I'm using this box as a desk.

One + counter + toshite + negative verb

Kono misc ni wa hitotsu **toshite**
yasui mono wa nai.

この店には 一つとして安い物はない。

There isn't a single item that is
inexpensive in this store.

Kare wa ichido **toshite** gaikoku e itta
koto wa nai.

彼は 一度として外国へ行ったことはない。

He's never been even once to a foreign
country.

In the form "bakari de naku," used to
express "not only ... but also."

Noun + bakari de naku...mo

Kare wa Eigo **bakari** de naku
Doitsu-go mo hanasu.
彼は英語ばかりでなくドイツ語も話す。
He speaks not only English but also
German.

Gakusei **bakari** de naku sensei mo
tenrankai ni itta.
学生ばかりでなく先生も展覧会に行った。
Not only students but also teachers
went to the exhibition.

Verb + bakari de naku...mo

Piano o hiku **bakari** de naku e mo
kaku.
ピアノを弾くばかりでなく絵も描く。
She not only plays the piano but also
does paintings.

Adjective + bakari de naku...mo

Kono heya wa hiroi **bakari** de naku
tenjō mo takai.
この部屋は広いばかりでなく天井も高い。
This room is not only large but also has
a high ceiling.

だけ dake (5)

In the form "dake de naku," used to express "not only...but also" (replaceable by bakari).

Noun + dake de naku...mo

Niku **dake** de naku sakana mo katta.
肉だけでなく魚も買った。
I bought not only beef but also fish.

Kago no naka ni ringo **dake** de naku
orenji mo aru.
かごの中にりんごだけでなくオレンジも
ある。
There are not only apples but also
oranges in the basket.

Verb + dake de naku...mo

Kare wa oyogu **dake** de naku tenisu
mo suru.
彼は泳ぐだけでなくテニスもする。
He not only swims but also plays tennis.

Adjective + dake de naku...mo

Sono ryōri wa oishii **dake** de naku
nedan mo yasui.
その料理はおいしいだけでなく値段も安い。
The food is not only tasty, but also the
price is reasonable.

のみ nomi (2)

In the form "nomi narazu," used to express "not only...but also" (replaceable by bakari/dake de naku).

Noun + nomi narazu...mo

Kaiga **nomi** narazu chōkoku mo
mita.
絵画のみならず彫刻も見た。
I saw not only paintings but also
sculptures.

Dansei **nomi** narazu josci mo kono
kurabu ni haitte iru.
男性のみならず女性もこのクラブに入っ
ている。
Not only men but also women are
members of this club.

Verb + nomi narazu...mo

Kare wa benkyō suru **nomi** narazu
undō mo suru.
彼は勉強するのみならず運動もする。
He not only studies but also exercises.

Adjective + nomi narazu ... mo

Kono kawa wa fukai **nomi** narazu
mizu mo kirei da.
この川は深いのみならず水もきれいだ。
This river is not only deep, but the
water is clear.

Exercise 47 (141–144): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kesa _____ kuruma wa ichidai _____ kono michi _____ tōtte imasen.

今朝 _____ 車は一台 _____ この道 _____ 通っていません。

Not a single car has passed along this street since this morning.

2. Kare wa hon o nansatsu _____ katta _____, mada issatsu _____ yonde inai.

彼は本を何冊 _____ 買った _____、まだ一冊 _____ 読んでいない。

Although he bought many books, he hasn't yet read even one.

3. Kanojo wa daigaku _____ Eigo _____ de naku Furansu-go _____ oshietta.

彼女は大学 _____ 英語 _____ でなくフランス語 _____ 教えた。

She taught not only English but also French at a college.

4. Kono kuruma wa enjin _____ ii _____ de naku sutairu _____ ii.

この車はエンジン _____ いい _____ でなくスタイル _____ いい。

This car has not only a good engine but also good style.

5. Watashi wa haha _____ barē _____ narazu piano _____ narawaserareta.

私は母 _____ バレ _____ ならずピアノ _____ 習わせられた。

I was made to learn not only ballet but also piano by my mother.

6. Gakusei _____ narazu sensei _____ sono kōgi _____ shusseki shita.

学生 _____ ならず先生 _____ その講義 _____ 出席した。

Not only students but also teachers attended the lecture.

Used to express "as soon as."

nari (3) なり

145

V-u + nari

Asagohan o taberu **nari**, ie o deta.

朝ご飯を食べるなり、家を出た。

As soon as I ate breakfast, I left the house.

Mise o deru **nari**, takushii ni notta.

店を出るなり、タクシーに乗った。

As soon as I left the store, I got in a taxi.

V-u + ga hayai ka

Heya ni hairu **ga** hayai ka, dentō o tsuketa.

部屋に入るが早いか、電灯をつけた。

As soon as I entered the room, I turned on the light.

Ame ga yamu **ga** hayai ka, shiai ga hajimatta.

雨が止むが早いか、試合が始まった。

As soon as the rain stopped, the game began.

V-u + ya ina ya

Okiru **ya** ina **ya**, mado o aketa.

起きるやいなや、窓を開けた。

As soon as I got up, I opened the window.

Kare wa keikan o miru **ya** ina **ya**, nigeta.

彼は警官を見るやいなや、逃げた。

As soon as he saw a policeman, he ran away.

V-u + ka + V-nai uchi ni

Ofisu ni hairu **ka** hairanai uchi ni denwa ga natta.

オフィスに入るか入らないうちに電話が鳴った。

No sooner had I entered the office than the phone rang.

Jugyō gaowaru **ka** owaranai uchi ni gakusei wa tachiagatta.

授業が終わるか終わらないうちに学生は立ち上がった。

No sooner had the class ended than the students stood up.

Exercise 48 (I-4S-I-48): Follow the directions below.

A. Change nari to ga or ya and rewrite the sentences.

1. Ginza de takushii o oriru nari, resutoran ni haitta.

銀座でタクシーを降りるなり、レストランに入った。

As soon as I got out of the taxi in Ginza, I entered a restaurant.

2. Kūkō ni tsuku nari, Wada-san ni denwa shimashita.

空港に着くなり、和田さんに電話しました。

As soon as I arrived at the airport, I phoned Mr. Wada.

3. Asa okiru nari, o-furo ni hairimashita.

朝起きるなり、お風呂に入りました。

As soon as I got up in the morning, I took a bath.

B. Select a correct particle for each sentence.

1. Kare wa kaigi ga owaru (ga/ka/ya) owaranai uchi ni heya o deta.

彼は会議が終わる (が・か・や) 終わらないうちに部屋を出た。

No sooner had the meeting ended than he left the room.

2. Kōdō ni hairu (ga/ka/ya) hayai (ga/ka/ya), kōgi ga hajimatta.

講堂に入る (が・か・や) 早い (が・か・や)、講義が始まった。

As soon as I entered the auditorium, the lecture started.

3. Mado o akeru (ga/ka/ya) akenai uchi ni tori ga tobikonde kita.

窓を開ける (が・か・や) 開けないうちに鳥が飛び込んできた。

No sooner had I opened the window than a bird flew into the house.

4. Kanojo wa watashi o miru (ga/ka/ya) ina (ga/ka/ya), namac o yonda.

彼女は私を見る (が・か・や) いな (が・か・や)、名前を呼んだ。

As soon as she saw me, she called out my name.

149

ばかり **bakari** (5)

Indicates the only action left to do.

V-u + **bakari**

Mō hikkoshi o suru **bakari** desu.

もう引っ越しをするばかりです。

The only thing left for us to do is to move. (We are ready to move.)

150

ばかり **bakari** (6)

In the form "bakari ni," emphasizes a reason or cause.

Verb + **bakari ni**

Kaze o hiita **bakari** ni, gaishutsu dekinai.

風邪をひいたばかりに、外出出来ない。

Just because I caught a cold, I can't go out.

Shukudai o wasureta **bakari** ni, sensei ni shikarareta.

宿題を忘れたばかりに、先生に叱られた。

Because I forgot my homework, I was scolded by my teacher.

Adj/adjectival noun + **bakari ni**

Michi ga semai **bakari** ni, basu wa tōrenai.

道が狭いばかりに、バスは通れない。

Because the street is narrow, buses can't get through.

Kanojo wa uta ga jōzu na **bakari** ni, yoku utawaserareru.

彼女は歌が上手なばかりに、よく歌わせられる。

Because she is good at singing, she is made to sing often.

151

すら **sura** (!)

Adds emphasis, with the sense of "even" (replaceable by *sae*).

Noun/gerund + **sura**

Akanbō (de) **sura** oyogemasu.

赤ん坊（で）すら泳げます。

Even a baby can swim.

Tomu wa muzukashii kanji **sura** yomeru.

トムは難しい漢字すら読める。

Tom can read even difficult kanji.

Isogashikute taberu koto **sura** dekinai.

忙しくて食べることすら出来ない。

I am so busy that I can't even eat.

Exercise 49 (149–151): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Shigoto ga owatta _____, mō kaeru _____ desu.

仕事が終わつた _____、もう帰る _____ です。

Because my work is done, I'm ready to go home now.

2. Dekakeru _____ da _____, takushii _____ yonde kudasai.

出かける _____ だ _____、タクシー _____ 呼んで下さい。

I'm ready to leave, so please call a taxi for me.

3. Kare wa atarashii kuruma _____ hoshii _____ ni, yoru _____ hataraitte iru.

彼は新しい車 _____ 欲しい _____ に、夜 _____ 働いている。

It's because he wants a new car that he's working nights as well.

4. Samui hi _____ sakkā o mi _____ itta _____ ni, kaze o hiite shimatta.

寒い日 _____ サッカーを見 _____ 行った _____ に、風邪をひいてしまった。

I caught a cold, just because I went to watch soccer on a cold day.

5. Sannen _____ Eigo _____ naratta _____, yasashii koto _____ ienai.

三年 _____ 英語 _____ 習った _____、易しい事 _____ 言えない。

Although I studied English as many as three years, I can't even say simple things.

6. Jisho _____ areba, Tomu wa Nihongo _____ repōto o kaku koto _____ dekiru.

辞書 _____ あれば、トムは日本語 _____ レポートを書くこと _____ 出来る。

If he has a dictionary, Tom can even write a report in Japanese.

Indicates a deprecatory or humble attitude toward the item in question.

nado (4)

など

152

Noun + nado

Watashi **nado**, totemo kore wa yakusemasen.

私など、とてもこれは訳せません。

Someone like me could never translate this.

Sonna takai mono **nado** totemo kaenai.

そんな高い物などとても買えない。

I could never buy such an expensive thing.

とも **tomo** (5)

Adds emphasis, with the sense of "no matter what" or "even if."

V-ō/yō + tomo

Nani ga okorō **tomo**, saigo made ganbarō.
何が起ろうとも、最後まで頑張ろう。

No matter what will happen, let's do our best to the end.

Kare ga yameyō **tomo**, kono kikaku wa kawaranai.
彼が辞めようとも、この企画は変わらない。

Even if he should resign, this plan won't change.

とも **tomo** (6)

In the form "tomo arō hito," indicates someone who has acted contrary to a general opinion about him or her.

Noun (person) + tomo arō hito

Keikan **tomo** arō hito ga nusumi o shita.
警官ともあろう人が盗みをした。

Although he is supposed to be a policeman, he stole something.

Exercise 50 (152-154): Put appropriate particles in the blank.

1. Watashi _____ yasui sararīi _____ ic _____ totemo kaemasen.

私 _____ 安いサラリー _____ 家 _____ とても買えません。

With my small salary, I could never buy anything like a house.

2. Oda-san _____ totemo buchō _____ narenai _____ omoimasu.

小田さん _____ とても部長 _____ なれない _____ 思います。

I think that someone like Mr. Oda could never make a department head.

3. Dare _____ ai _____ koyō _____ , sanji _____ isogashikute aemasen.

だれ _____ 会い _____ 来よう _____ 、三時 _____ 忙しくて会えません。

No matter who comes to see me, I'm too busy to see anyone till three o'clock.

4. Kachō _____ yakusoku da _____ , ashita ame ga furō _____ tsuri _____ iku.

課長 _____ 約束だ _____ 、明日雨が降ろう _____ 釣り _____ 行く。

Because I promised the section chief, I'll go fishing tomorrow even if it rains.

5. Daigaku _____ gakuchō _____ arō hito ga sukyandaru _____ yamesaserareta.

大学 _____ 学長 _____ あろう人がスキャンダル _____ 辞めさせられた。

Although he was president of the university, he was forced out due to the scandal.

Used to express "far from" or "not to mention."

dokoro ka (のろか)

155

Noun + dokoro ka ... mo

Kare wa ie **dokoro ka** kuruma mo nai.

彼は家どころか車もない。

He doesn't even have a car, not to mention a house.

Adj./adjectival noun + dokoro ka

Heya wa hiroi **dokoro ka** semasugiru.

部屋は広いどころか狭すぎる。

Far from being large, the room is too small.

V-u + dokoro ka

Yoku hataraku **dokoro ka** asonde bakari iru.

よく働くどころか遊んでばかりいる。

Far from working hard, he does nothing but play.

Kore wa kantan **dokoro ka** totemo fukuzatsu da.

これは簡単どころかとても複雑だ。

Far from being simple, this is very complicated.

Indicates a cause or reason.

dake ni (だけに)

156

Noun + dake ni

Ichiryū no gaka **dake ni** kanojo no e wa subarashii.

一流の画家だけに、彼女の絵は素晴らしい。

As you might expect of a first-rate painter, her paintings are wonderful.

Adjective/verb + dake ni

Kore wa chiisai **dake ni**, tsukaiyasui.

これは小さいだけに、使いやすい。

Because this is small, it's easy to use.

Yoku doryoku shita **dake ni**, seiseki ga agatta.

よく努力しただけに、成績が上がった。

Since he tried hard, his grades went up.

In the form "made mo nai," provides negative emphasis, with the sense of "there's no need to..."

V-u + made mo nai

Kono repōto wa yomu made mo nai.

このレポートは読むまでもない。

There is no need to read this report.

Exercises 51 (155–157): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Soko _____ iku _____, ichijikan _____ sanjikan _____ kakatta.

そこ _____ 行く _____、一時間 _____ 三時間 _____ かかった。

Far from one hour, it took me as long as three hours to get there.

2. Kare _____ kaita shōsetsu wa omoshiroi _____ totomo tsumaranai.

彼 _____ 書いた小説は面白い _____ とてもつまらない。

The novel that he wrote is far from interesting, in fact, it's quite boring.

3. Biru wa shiken _____ aru _____, benkyō suru _____ asonde _____ iru.

ビルは試験 _____ ある _____、勉強する _____ 遊んで _____ いる。

Although he'll have examinations, far from studying: Bill is doing nothing but playing.

4. Kanojo wa Chūgoku _____ nannen _____ sunde ita _____,

Chūgokugo _____ yoku hanaseru.

彼女は中国 _____ 何年 _____ 住んでいた _____、中国語 _____ よく話せる。

Because she lived in China many years, she can speak Chinese well.

5. Watashi _____ ie wa sūpā _____ tōi _____, kaimono _____ fuben desu.

私 _____ 家はスーパー _____ 遠い _____、買物 _____ 不便です。

Because my house is far from the supermarket, it's inconvenient for shopping.

6. Kore ga mada tsukaeru _____, atarashii _____ o kau _____ mo nai.

これがまだ使える _____、新しい _____ を買う _____ もない。

If we can still use this, there's no need to buy a new one.

Used as a conjunction to mean "but" or "although" (replaceable by ga).

mono no (モノの)

158

Verb + mono no

Sekkyō suru **mono no**, jikkō wa muzukashii

説教するものの、実行は難しい。

Although you may preach, it is difficult to practice.

Kore o katta **mono no**, tsukaikata ga yoku wakaranai.

これを買ったものの、使い方がよく分からぬ。

I bought this, but don't know very well how to use it.

Used as a conjunction to mean "even if."

tokoro de (所で) ところで

Exercise 52 (158–160): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Ryōkō suru koto _____ kimeta _____, doko _____ iku _____ mada wakaranai.
旅行すること _____ 決めた _____、どこ _____ 行く _____ まだ分からない。
Although I decided to travel, I don't know where to go yet.
2. Kare wa daigaku _____ haitta _____, ichinen _____ yamete, gaikoku _____ itta.
彼は大学 _____ 入った _____、一年 _____ 辞めて、外国 _____ 行った。
Although he entered college, he quit in one year and went abroad.
3. Denwa _____ chūmon shita _____, kuru _____ isshūkan _____ kakaru deshō.
電話 _____ 注文した _____、来る _____ 一週間 _____かかるでしょう。
Even if I order it by phone, it would take at least a week to come.
4. Ima itta _____, kare wa goji _____ shigoto _____ isogashii darō.
今行った _____、彼は五時 _____ 仕事 _____ 忙しいだろう。
Even if I go now, he'll be busy with his work until five o'clock.
5. Sētā _____ kai _____ itta _____, hoshii _____ wa mō urete ita.
セーター _____ 買い _____ 行った _____、欲しい _____ はもう売れていた。
I went to buy a sweater but the one I wanted was sold already.

161

けれども **keredomo** (2)

Indicates a preliminary remark
(replaceable by ga).

Sentence + **keredomo**

Oda desu **keredomo**, Hara-san wa irasshaimasu ka.

小田ですけれども、原さんはいらっしゃいますか。

I'm Oda. Is Miss Hara here?

Ano ken desu **keredomo**, dōshimashō ka
あの件ですけれども、どうしましょうか。

Speaking of that matter, what shall we do?

Sentence + gaDaijōbu da to omoimasu **ga**.

丈夫だと思いますが。

I think it will be all right.

Kachō wa ima kaigichū desu **ga**.

課長は今会議中ですが。

The section chief is now in the meeting
(he's not available).

Indicates a desire (replaceable by ga).

keredomo (3) けれども**Sentence + keredomo**Mō sukoshi chiisai no **ga** hoshii no desu
keredomo.

もう少し小さいのが欲しいのですけれども。

I'd like something a little smaller.

Pari e ikitai n **da** **keredomo**.

パリへ行きたいんだけども。

I wish I could go to Paris.

Exercise 53 (161–163): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kono kikaku _____ koto desu _____, kachō ga yame _____ yaru no desu ka.

この企画 _____ 事です _____ 、課長が辞め _____ やるのですか。

Speaking of this plan, are we going to do it even if the section chief should resign?

2. "Yamada desu _____, Wada-san wa irasshaimasu ka."

"Sanjuppun mae _____ shokuji _____ demashita _____."

「山田です _____ 、和田さんはいらっしゃいますか。」

「三十分前 _____ 食事 _____ 出ました _____。」

"I'm Yamada. Is Mr. Wada in?" "He left for lunch 30 minutes ago."

3. "Oda-san wa nanji _____ koraremasu ka."

"Kuji _____ kuru _____ omoimasu _____."

「小田さんは何時 _____ 来られますか。」「九時 _____ 来る _____ 思います _____。」

"What time will Mr. Oda come?" "He'll come by nine o'clock, I think."

4. Natsuyasumi _____ yama _____ umi _____ ikitai no desu _____.

夏休み _____ 山 _____ 海 _____ 行きたいのです _____。

During summer vacation I'd like to go to the mountains, the sea, or somewhere.

5. Dekire _____ , Tōkyo _____ sannen _____ benkyō shitai n da _____.

出来れ _____ 、東京 _____ 三年 _____ 勉強したいんだ _____。

If possible, I'd like to study in Tokyo for about three years.

164

ね ne (1)

A sentence-final particle, used for confirmation of a statement.

Sentence + ne

Samui desu ne.

寒いですね。

It's cold, isn't it?

Opera wa subarashikatta desu ne.

オペラは素晴らしいかったですね。

The opera was splendid, wasn't it?

165

ね ne (2)

A sentence-final particle, used to soften a request or suggestion.

Sentence + ne

Zehi o-negai shimasu ne.

ぜひお願いしますね。

Please be sure to do it.

Mō kaerimashō ne.

もう帰りましょうね。

Let's go home, O.K.?

166

ね ne (3)

A sentence-final particle that indicates a reason or cause.

Sentence + kara + ne

Kyō wa ikenai. Kaigi ga aru kara ne.

今日は行けない。会議があるからね。

I can't go today. I have a meeting, you know.

V-te + ne

Tsukareta. Arukisugite ne.

疲れた。歩きすぎてね。

I'm tired. I walked too much, you know.

A sentence-final particle that indicates emotion.

ねえ (1)

ねえ

167

Sentence + ne

Omoshiroi hanashi deshita ne.

面白い話でしたねえ。

What an interesting talk it was!

Suteki na doresu (desu) ne.

素敵なドレス（です）ねえ。

What a gorgeous dress!

A sentence-final particle that indicates a strong conviction.

よ (1)

よ

168

Sentence + yo

Iie, kyo wa itsuka desu yo.

いいえ、今日は五日ですよ。

No, today is the fifth, you know.

Hara-san wa ashita kimasu yo.

原さんは明日来ますよ。

Miss Hara will come tomorrow for sure.

A sentence-final particle that indicates a request or suggestion.

よ (2)

よ

169

Sentence + yo

Hachiji ni kite kudasai yo.

八時に来て下さいよ。

Come at eight o'clock.

Chotto yasumimashō yo.

ちょっと休みましょうよ。

Let's take a break.

かしら kashira (！)

A sentence-final particle that indicates uncertainty, a request, or a question to oneself. Used mainly by women.

Sentence + kashira

Kare wa kuru **kashira**.
彼は来るかしら。

I wonder if he's coming.

Ginkō wa mō shimatta **kashira**.
銀行はもう閉まったかしら。

I wonder if the bank has already closed.

Kore tetsudatte moraeru **kashira**.
これ手伝ってもらえるかしら。

I wonder if you could help me with this.

Mō kaette mo ii **kashira**.
もう帰ってもいいかしら。

I wonder if I could go home now.

かな kana (！)

A sentence-final particle that indicates uncertainty, a request, or a question to oneself. Used mainly by men.

Sentence + kana

Ano mise wa nanji ni aku **kana**.
あの店は何時に開くかな。

What time does that store open, I wonder.

Kaigi wa owatta **kana**.
会議は終わったかな。

I wonder if the meeting is over.

Kono isu o hakonde moraeru **kana**.
このいすを運んでもらえるかな。

I wonder if you could carry these chairs for me.

Ashita ame ga furu **kana**.
明日雨が降るかな。

I wonder if it will rain tomorrow.

Exercise 54 (164–171): Select a sentence-final particle for each sentence.

1. Shinjuku e asobi ni ikō (kana / yo).

新宿へ遊びに行こう (かな・よ)。

Let's go to Shinjuku to have fun.

2. Koko ni name to jūsho o kaite kudasai (ne / nē).

ここに名前と住所を書いて下さい (ね・ねえ)。

Write your name and address here, will you?

3. Ginza made kuruma de juppun mo kakaranai (nē/yo/kashira).

銀座まで車で十分もかからない (ねえ・よ・かしら)。

It doesn't take ten minutes by car to Ginza, I'm sure.

4. Kyō sensei ni shikarareta. Shukudai o wasurete (yo/ne).

今日先生に叱られた。宿題を忘れて (よ・ね)。

I was scolded by my teacher today. I forgot my homework, you know.

5. Ii tenki desu (yo/nē). Sukoshi arukimashō (yo/nē).

いい天気です (よ・ねえ)。少し歩きましょう (よ・ねえ)。

What fine weather! Let's take a short walk.

6. Pari kara no hikōki wa mō Narita ni tsuita (ne/yo/kashira).

パリからの飛行機はもう成田に着いた (ね・よ・かしら)。

I wonder if the plane from Paris has already arrived at Narita.

7. Kōdō de dare ka piano o hiite iru (yo/ne/kana).

講堂でだれかピアノを弾いている (よ・ね・かな)。

Someone is playing the piano in the auditorium, aren't they?

8. Ano kabe ni kono posutā o hatte moraeru (yo/nē/kana).

あの壁にこのポスターをはってもらえる (よ・ねえ・かな)。

I wonder if you could hang this poster on that wall.

A sentence-final particle used by men for confirmation of a statement.

na (ナ)

な

172

Sentence + na

Ano bā wa takai **na**.

あのバーは高いな。

That bar is expensive, isn't it?

Kare wa yoku yatta **na**.

彼はよくやったな。

He did well, didn't he?

173

な na (2)

A sentence-final particle used by men to indicate prohibition.

V-u + na

Ima, iku na.

今、行くな。

Don't go now.

Koko de taberu na.

ここで食べるな。

Don't eat here.

174

なあ nā (1)

A sentence-final particle used mostly by men to indicate emotion.

Sentence + nā

Yoku ame ga furu nā.

よく雨が降るなあ。

How hard it's raining!

Yūbe wa samukatta nā.

昨夜は寒かったなあ。

How cold it was last night!

175

なあ nā (2)

A sentence-final particle indicating a desire.

V-u + to ii + nā

V-ba + yokatta + nā

Kyō kanojo ga kuru to ii nā.

今日彼女が来るといいなあ。

I wish she would come today.

Motto benkyō sureba yokatta nā.

もっと勉強すればよかったなあ。

I wish I'd studied more.

A sentence-final particle used to indicate a question or soften a command. Used usually by women.

no (ノ)

の

176

Sentence + no

"Doko e iku **no**." "Uchi e kareu **no**."
「どこへ行くの。」「うちへ帰るの。」
"Where are you going?" "Going home."

Koko de asobanai **no**.
ここで遊ばないの。
Don't play here.

A sentence-final particle used by women to soften a statement.

wa (ヲ) わ

177

Sentence + wa

Wada-san wa konai to omou **wa**.
和田さんは来ないと思うわ。
I think that Miss Wada won't come.

Shiai wa tsumaranakatta **wa**.
試合はつまらなかつたわ。
The game was boring.

A sentence-final particle used mostly by men to indicate slight emphasis.

sa (ヲ) サ

178

Noun/adj./adjectival noun/verb + sa

Kore ga shashin **sa**.
これが写真さ。
This is the photo (that I told you of).

Kare no kuruma wa ōkii **sa**.
彼の車は大きいさ。
His car is big.

Sore wa daisuki **sa**.
それは大好きさ。
I just love it.

Shukudai wa ato de suru **sa**.
宿題は後でするさ。
I'll do my homework later.

こと koto (1)

A sentence-final particle used by women to indicate emotion.

Sentence + koto

Mā, hana ga utsukushii **koto**.

まあ花が美しいこと。

Oh, how beautiful the flowers are!

Yoku ganbatta **koto**.

よく頑張ったこと。

How hard you tried!

こと koto (2)

A sentence-final particle used by women to indicate a suggestion or invitation.

V-nai + koto

Kaimono ni ikanai **koto**.

買物に行かないこと。

Shall we go shopping?

Uchi e asobi ni konai **koto**.

うちへ遊びに来ないこと。

Won't you come over to my house for a visit?

Exercise 55 (172–180) Select a sentence-final particle for each sentence.

1. Kare wa Nihonjin ni shite wa se ga takai (no/na/kana).

彼は日本人にしては背が高い (の・な・かな)。

He is tall for a Japanese, isn't he?

2. Tomu wa Nihongo ga yoku hanaseru (sa/nā/kana).

トムは日本語がよく話せる (さ・なあ・かな)。

Tom can speak Japanese so well!

3. Suteki na sētā (nē/yo). Doko de katta (wa/no).

素敵なセーター (ねえ・よ)。どこで買った (わ・の)。

What a nice sweater! Where did you get it?

4. Samui kara, soto de asobanai (na/no/koto).

寒いから、外で遊ばない (な・の・こと)。

It's cold, so don't play outside.

5. Tsukareta (wa/sa). Asoko de o-cha demo nomanai (wa/sa/koto)

疲れた (わ・さ)。あそこでお茶でも飲まない (わ・さ・こと)。

I'm tired. Shall we have tea or something over there?

6. Ano yama wa kiken da kara, hitori de noboru (sa/na/wa).

あの山は危険だから、一人で登る (さ・な・わ)。

Because that mountain is dangerous, don't climb alone.

7. Ano shiai o mi ni ieba yokatta (sa/nā/koto).

あの試合を見に行けばよかった (さ・なあ・こと)。

I wish I'd gone to see that game.

8. Watashi-tachi onna dake de pātii o shita (sa/no). Yokatta (sa/wa).

私達女だけでパーティーをした (さ・の)。よかった (さ・わ)。

We women alone had a party. We had a good time.

A sentence-final particle indicating a reason
or excuse.

mono (も) の

181

Sentence + mono

“Naze ikanai no.” “Isogashii **mono**.”

「なぜ行かないの。」「忙しいもの。」

“Why don't you go?” “I'm busy, you know.”

Mō nai no. Watashi ga minna tsukatta **mono**.

もうないの。私がみんな使ったもの。

All gone. I've used them all.

A sentence-final particle indicating an assertion.

tomo (とも)

182

Sentence + tomo

“Mō kaette mo ii desu ka.” “Ii (desu) **tomo**.”

「もう帰つてもいいですか。」「いい (です) とも。」

“May I go home now?” “Certainly.”

Motto benkyō suru **tomo**.

もっと勉強するとも。

I will definitely study harder.

183

ものか mono ka (1)

A sentence-final particle used mainly by men to indicate a negative determination or a rhetorical question. Mono desu ka may be used by women.

V-u + mono ka/mono desu ka

Anna tokoro e nido to iku mono ka.
あんな所へ二度と行くものか。

I'll never go to such a place again.

Mō ano mise de kau mono desu ka.
もうあの店で買うものですか。

I'll never shop again at that store.

184

や ya (3)

A sentence-final particle used by men to soften a statement, request, or suggestion.

Sentence + ya

Kore wa umai ya.
これはうまいや。

This is tasty.

Mō yameyō ya.
もう止めようや。

Let's quit now.

185

たら tara (3)

A sentence-final particle indicating a suggestion or proposal.

V-ta + ra

Kono hon o yondara.
この本を読んだら。

Why not read this book?

Kochira no akai no o kattara.
こちらの赤いのを買ったら。

Why not buy this red one?

A sentence-final particle indicating a rhetorical question with negative implication.

yara (3)

やら

186

Sentence + yara

Kono ame wa itsu yamu (no) **yara**.

この雨はいつ止む（の）やら。

I wonder when this rain will stop.

Kare no shōrai wa dō naru **yara**.

彼の将来はどうなるやら。

I wonder what his future will be like.

A sentence-final particle used by men to add force to a sentence.

ze (イ)

ぜ

187

Sentence + ze

Saki ni iku **ze**.

先に行くぜ。

I'm going on ahead.

Tanonda **ze**.

頼んだぜ。

I'm counting on you.

A sentence-final particle used by men to add force to a sentence (more emphatic than ze) or to indicate a question to oneself.

zo (イ)

ぞ

188

Sentence + zo

Kore wa muzukashii **zo**.

これは難しいぞ。

This is difficult.

Kondo koso kitto ganbaru **zo**.

今度こそきっと頑張るぞ。

I sure will try hard this time.

Jikan da **zo**. Sorosoro dekareru **zo**.

時間だぞ。そろそろ出かけるぞ。

It's time. I'm leaving now.

Doa ga aite iru. Hen da **zo**.

ドアが開いている。変だぞ。

The door is open. Strange!

Exercise 56 (18)–(188): Select a sentence-final particle for each sentence.

1. Konban wa derarenai (tomo/no), Ashita shiken ga aru (tomo/mono).

今晚は出られない (とも・の)。 明日試験がある (とも・もの)。

I can't go out tonight. I have an examination tomorrow, you know.

2. "Kore karite mo ii (kana/yara)." "Ii (tomo/mono ka)."

「これ借りてもいい (かな・やら)。」「いい (とも・ものか)。」

"I wonder if I can borrow this." "Sure you can."

3. Mō sanji da (wa/ze). Chotto yasunde o-cha demo nomō (zo/ya).

もう三時だ (わ・ゼ)。ちょっと休んでお茶でも飲もう (ぞ・や)。

It's already three o'clock. Let's take a break and have tea or something.

4. Daigaku ni haitta mono no, itsu sotsugyō dekiru (tara/yara).

大学に入ったものの、いつ卒業出来る (たら・やら)。

Although he entered college, I wonder when he'll be able to graduate.

5. Hen da (zo/sa). Michi o machigaeta (ze/kana)

変だ (ぞ・さ)。道を間違えた (ゼ・かな)。

Strange! I wonder if we took the wrong road.

6. Kinyōbi made ni kono shigoto o sumase (yo/ya/tara).

金曜日までにこの仕事を済ませ (よ・や・たら)。

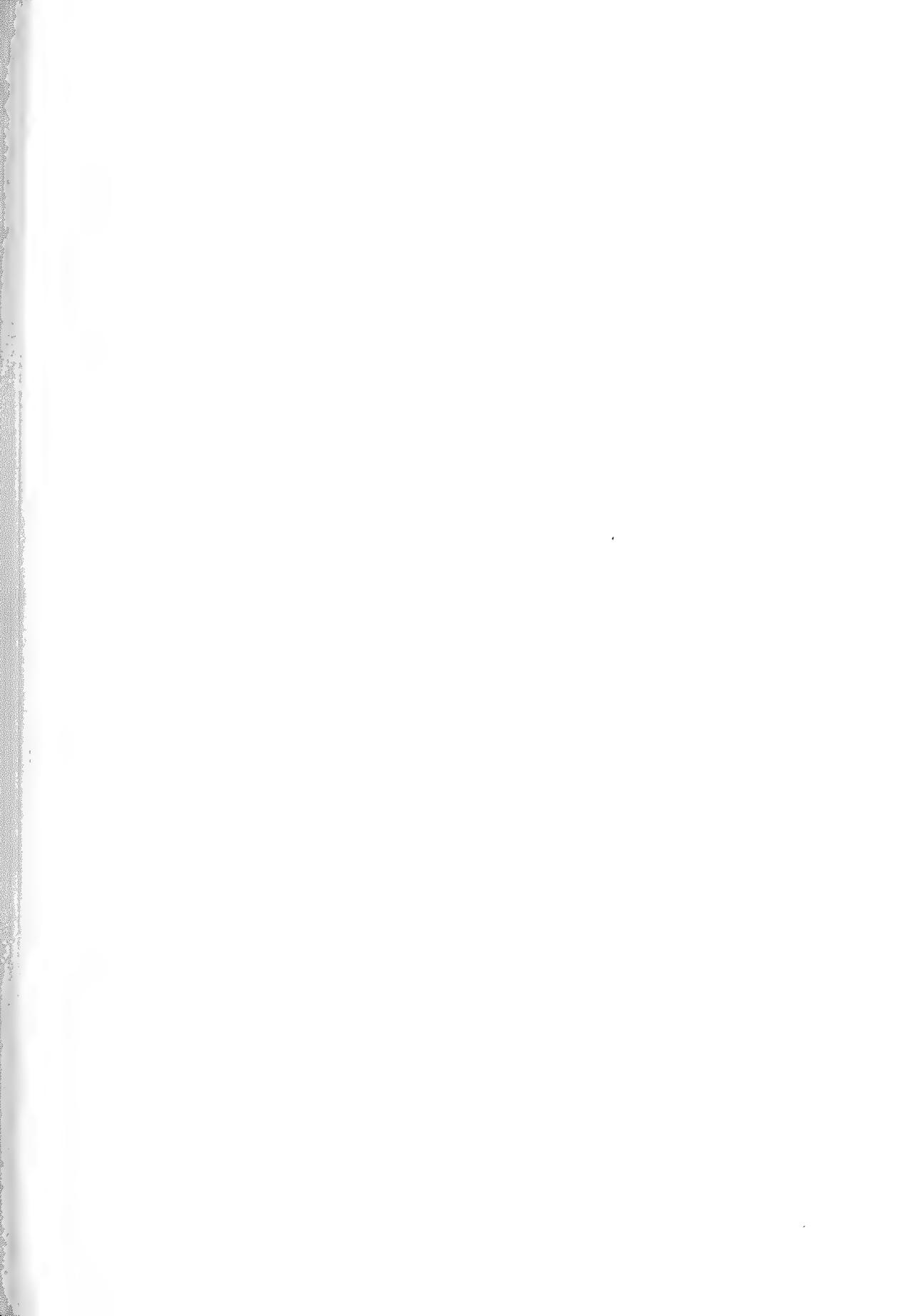
Why not finish this work by Friday?

7. Buchō ni tanomarete mo, konna shigoto ga dekiru (tomo/mono ka/yara)

部長に頼まれても、こんな仕事を出来る (とも・ものか・やら)。

Even if I were asked by the department head, I wouldn't do such a job.

Alphabetical Finding List & Answers to Exercises



ba ば

(1) Used as a conjunction, "if."

77

Chikatetsu de ikeba, nijupun kakaru.

地下鉄で行けば二十分かかる。

If you go by subway, it takes 20 minutes.

Yasukereba, kaimasu.

安ければ買います。

If it's cheap, I'll buy it.

(2) In the form ba ii "you need only do," "all you have to do."

78

Mainichi sukoshi undō sureba ii.

毎日少し運動すればいい。

You need only exercise a little every day.

(3) Enumerates two or more actions or states: "both...and," "neither...nor."

79

Jimu wa sashimi mo tabereba sushi mo taberu.

ジムはさしみも食べればすしも食べる。

Jim eats both sashimi and sushi.

Sono niwa wa hiroku mo nakereba semaku mo nai.

その庭は広くもなければ狭くもない。

The garden is neither large nor small.

bakari ばかり

(1) Indicates approximate amount: "about"

25

Ie ga goken **bakari** tatte imasu.

家が五軒ばかり建っています。

About five houses are being built.

(2) Indicates only item, action or state: "only," "nothing but," "just."

62

Kare wa sake **bakari** nonde imasu.

彼は酒ばかり飲んでいます。

He is drinking nothing but sake.

Kono shinamono wa yasui **bakari** desu.

この品物は安いばかりです。

This article is just cheap.

(3) Indicates an action just completed: "just done"

63

Kare wa okita **bakari** desu.

彼は起きたばかりです。

He has just gotten up.

(4) In the form bakari de naku, "not only...but also."

142

Kare wa Eigo **bakari** de naku Doitsu-go mo hanasu.

彼は英語ばかりでなくドイツ語も話す。

He speaks not only English but also German.

(5) Indicates the only action left to do. "be ready to do."

149

Mō hikkoshi o suru **bakari** desu.

もう引っ越しをするばかりです。

The only thing left for us to do is to move. (We are ready to move.)

(6) In the form, "bakari ni" emphasizes a reason or cause: "just because."

150

Kaze o hiita **bakari** ni, gaishutsu dekinai.

風邪をひいたばかりに、外出出来ない。

Just because I caught a cold, I can't go out.

(3) Indicates an extent or amount: "as...as."

123

Arukuru **dake** aruita.

歩けるだけ歩いた。

I walked as much as I could.

(4) "The more...the more."

124

Tabereba taberu **dake** futorimasu.

食べれば食べるだけ太ります。

The more you eat, the fatter you become.

(5) In the form, "dake de naku" "not only...but also."

143

dake だけ

(1) Indicates a limit on things or amounts: "only."

Otoko no ko **dake** (ga) kimashita.

男の子だけ (が) 来ました。

Only boys came.

Hawai e ichido **dake** itta.

ハワイへ一度だけ行った。

I've been to Hawaii only once.

(2) Indicates a limit on an action or state: "only," "just"

57

Maiasa jūsu o ippai nomu **dake** da.

毎朝ジュースを一杯飲むだけだ。

I just drink a glass of juice every morning.

Kono kēki wa amai **dake** desu.

このケーキは甘いでだけです。

This cake is sweet, that's all.

dake ni だけに

(1) Indicates a cause or reason: "as you might expect," "because."

156

Ichiryū no gaka **dake ni**, kanojo no e wa subarashii.

一流の画家だけに彼女の絵は素晴らしい。

As you might expect of a first-rate painter, her paintings are wonderful.

dano だの

(1) Indicates examples from a longer list: "and," "things like."

110

Kanojo wa inu **dano** neko **dano(o)** katte iru.

彼女は犬だの猫だの（を）飼っている。

She keeps a dog, a cat, and other animals.

Nomu **dano** taberu **dano** odoru **dano** shita.

飲むだの食べるだの踊るだのした。

We did things like drinking, eating, dancing, and so on.

(2) Indicates for a pair of opposite actions or states.

111

Kanojo wa iku **dano** ikanai **dano** (to) itte iru.

彼女は行くだの行かないだの（と）言っている。

She says that she's going and then that she's not going.

(2) Indicates a means or materials: "by," "with."

26

Fune **de** Hawai e ikimashita.

船でハワイへ行きました。

We went to Hawaii by boat.

Kami **de** ningyō o tsukurimasu.

紙で人形を作ります。

They make dolls with paper.

(3) Indicates a limit or scope: "in," "among."

36

Tomu wa kurasu **de** ichiban ii gakusei desu.

トムはクラスで一番いい学生です。

Tom is the best student in the class.

(4) Indicates a cause or reason: "due to," "because of."

48

Byōki **de** shigoto ni ikemasen.

病気で仕事に行けません。

I can't go to work due to illness.

de で

(1) Indicates the location of an action: "at," "in," "on."

17

Gakusei wa kōdō **de** kōgi o kiite imasu.

学生は講堂で講義を聞いています。

The students are listening to the lecture in the auditorium.

(5) Indicates conditions: "with," "by,"

54

Kodomo ga hadashi **de** hashitte iru.

子供がはだしで走っている。

A child is running barefoot.

ga ガ

(1) Indicates the subject.

3

Kōen ga arimasu.

公園があります。

There is a park.

Dare ga kimashita ka.

だれが来ましたか。

Who came?

(2) In the "...wa...ga" construction, indicates the subject or the object of certain verbs and adjectives.

51

Zō wa hana ga nagai desu.

象は鼻が長いです。

Elephants have long trunks. (As for elephants, their trunks are long.)

Jimu wa Nihongo ga hanasemasu.

ジムは日本語が話せます。

Jim can speak Japanese.

Watashi wa ii kamera ga hoshii.

私はいいカメラが欲しい。

I want a good camera.

(3) Used as a conjunction to connect two sentences: "but," "and."

52

Tomu wa kimasu ga Biru wa kimasen.

トムは来ますがビルは来ません。

Tom is coming, but Bill isn't coming.

Watashi mo sono eiga o mimashita ga, totomo yokatta desu.

私もその映画を見ましたが、とても良かったです。

I also saw the movie, and found it very good.

4) Indicates the subject of a subordinate clause when it is different from the subject of the main clause.

65

Kare ga kita toki, watashi wa shokuji o shite imashita.

彼が来た時、私は食事をしていました。

When he came, I was having a meal.

(5) Indicates the subject of a relative clause.

68

Haha ga yoku kau mise wa asoko desu.

母がよく買う店はあそこでです。

The store where my mother often shops is over there.

(6) Lists conditions in spite of which the main verb is true: "even if," "whether or not."

138

Ame ga furō ga yuki ga furō ga, watashi wa ikimasu.

雨が降ろうが雪が降ろうが、私は行きます。

Even if it rains or snows, I'll go.

Kare ga koyō ga komai ga, kaigi o hajimemashō.

彼が来ようが来まいが、会議を始めましょう。

Whether he comes or not, let's start the meeting.

(7) In the form "ga hayai ka": "as soon as."

146

Heya ni hairu ga hayai ka, dentō o tsuketa.

部屋に入るが早いか、電灯をつけた。

As soon as I entered the room, I turned on the light.

(8) Used to soften a statement or refusal.

162

Kachō wa ima kaigichū desu **ga**.

課長は今会議中ですが。

The section chief is now in the meeting (he's not available).

hodo ほど

(1) Indicates an approximate amount: "about."

24

Ringo ga muttsu **hodo** nokotte imasu.

りんごが六つほど残っています。

About six apples are left.

(2) Indicates a comparison in a negative sentence: "as...as."

41

Tomu **hodo** ii gakusei wa imasen.

トムほどいい学生はいません。

There is no student as good as Tom.

(3) Indicates the extent of an action or condition: "so...that."

121

Okirarenai **hodo** tsukarete imasu.

起きられないほど疲れています。

I am so tired that I can't get up.

(4) Indicates a relationship: "the more ...the more."

122

Renshū sureba suru **hodo** jōzu ni naru.

練習すればするほど上手になる。

The more you practice, the better you become.

ka か

(1) At the end of a sentence, indicates a question.

2

Anata wa gakusei desu **ka**.

あなたは学生ですか。

Are you a student?

(2) Indicates a choice or alternative: "either...or..."

27

Hara-san **ka** Miki-san ga kuru deshō.

原さんか三木さんが来るでしょう。

Either Mr. Hara or Mr. Miki will come.

(3) Used with an interrogative word: "something," "someone," "someday," "somewhere," etc.

42

Tsukue no ue ni nani **ka** arimasu.

机の上に何かあります。

There is something on the desk.

Dare **ka** kimashita.

だれか来ました。

Someone came.

(4) Indicates uncertainty about a state or reason: "I wonder."

108

Sumisu-san wa kuru deshō **ka**.

スミスさんは来るでしょうか。

I wonder if Mr. Smith is coming.

Shiken ga aru no **ka** Jimu wa yoku benkyō shite imasu.

試験があるのかジムはよく勉強しています。

I wonder if Jim will have an exam – he is studying hard.

(5) Used in an embedded sentence, indicates a question: "when," "what," etc.

109

Kaigi wa itsu aru **ka** oboete imasen.

会議はいつあるか覚えていません。

I don't remember when the meeting will be held.

Kare ga kuru **ka** dō **ka** shirimassen.

彼が来るかどうか知りません。

I don't know whether he'll come or not.

(6) In the form "ka...nai uchi ni": "no sooner had," "hardly had."

148

Ofisu ni hairu **ka** hairanai uchi ni denwa ga natta.

オフィスに入るか入らないうちに電話が鳴った。

No sooner had I entered the office than the phone rang.

kana かな

(1) A sentence-final particle. Indicates uncertainty, a request, or a question to oneself: "I wonder."

171

Ano mise wa nanji ni aku **kana**.

あの店は何時開くかな。

What time does that store open, I wonder.

Kono isu o hakonde moraeru **kana**.

このいすを運んでもらえるかな。

I wonder if you could carry these chairs.

kara から

(1) Indicates a starting point in time and space: "from."

20

Kaisha wa kuji **kara** hajimaru.

会社は九時から始まる。

(Work at) the company begins at nine o'clock.

Ano fune wa gaikoku **kara** kita.

あの船は外国から来た。

That ship came from a foreign country.

(2) Indicates source (a giver, material or cause): "from."

49

Watashi wa Oda-san **kara** jishin no nyūsu o kiita.

私は小田さんから地震のニュースを聞いた。

I heard the news about the earthquake from Mr. Oda.

Wain wa budō **kara** tsukuru.

ワインはぶどうから作る。

Wine is made from grapes.

(3) Used as a conjunction: "after," "since."

66

Shawā o abite **kara** nemasu.

シャワーを浴びてから寝ます。

I go to bed after taking a shower.

(4) Used as a conjunction, indicates a cause or reason: "because."

70

Ashita shiken ga aru **kara**, konban benkyō shimasu.

明日試験があるから、今晚勉強します。

Because I have an examination tomorrow, I'll study tonight.

kashira かしら

(1) A sentence-final particle. Indicates uncertainty, a request, or a question to oneself: "I wonder."

170

Kare wa kuru **kashira**.

彼は来るかしら。

I wonder if he is coming.

Kore tetsudatte moraeru **kashira**.

これ手伝ってもらえるかしら。

I wonder if you could help me with this.

(3) Indicates a desire: "I'd like," "I wish."

163

Mō sukoshi chiisai no ga hoshii no desu **keredomo**.

もう少し小さいのが欲しいのですけれども。

I'd like something a little smaller.

keredomo けれども

(1) Used as a conjunction: "but," "although."

160

Tomu wa kuru **keredomo** Jimu wa konai.

トムは来るけれどもジムは来ない。

Tom is coming but Jim is not.

(2) Indicates a preliminary remark.

161

Oda desu **keredomo**, Hara-san wa irasshaimasu ka.

小田ですけれども、原さんはいらっしゃいますか。

I am Oda. Is Mr. Hara here?

(2) Indicates the last time a certain incidence occurred: "since."

99

Asoko ni kuruma ga nidai **kiri** tomatte iru.

あそこに車が二台きり止まっている。

Only two cars are parked there.

(2) Indicates the last time a certain incidence occurred: "since."

99

Yamada-san wa are **kiri** kimasen.

山田さんはあれきり米ません。

Miss Yamada hasn't come since then.

koso こそ

(1) Emphasizes the word preceding it.

129

Rainen **koso** Igirisu e ikitai desu.

来年こそイギリスへ行きたいです。

Next year for sure, I'd like to go to England.

(2) Emphasizes a reason or cause: "because."

130

O-kane ga ireba **koso**, yoru mo hataraitē iru no desu.

お金が要ればこそ、夜も働いています。

It's because I really need the money that I'm working nights as well.

koto こと

(1) A sentence-final particle used by women to indicate emotion.

179

Mā, hana ga utsukushii **koto**.

まあ花が美しいこと。

Oh, how beautiful the flowers are!

(2) A sentence-final particle. Used by women to indicate a suggestion or invitation

180

Kaimono ni ikanai **koto**.

買物に行かないこと。

Shall we go shopping?

kurai くらい

(1) Indicates an approximate amount: "about."

23

Shiken wa nijikan **kurai** kakatta.

試験は二時間くらいかかった。

The examination took about two hours.

(2) Indicates a comparison in a positive sentence: "as...as."

40

Sono niwa wa gorufujō **kurai** ōkii.

その庭はゴルフ場くらい大きい。

The garden is as big as a golf course.

(3) Indicates an extent of an action or condition: "as much as," "so...that."

120

Hiragana **kurai** yomemasu.

ひらがなくらい読めます。

I can read as much as hiragana.

Nodo ga itaku naru **kurai** utatta.

のどが痛くなるくらい歌った。

I sang so much that my throat hurt.

made まで

(1) Indicates a limit on time, space, or quantity: "until," "to," "up to."

22

Yūbe jūji **made** benkyō shita.

昨日十時まで勉強した。

I studied until ten last night.

Ie kara gakkō **made** arukimasu.

家から学校まで歩きます。

I walk from my house to the school.

Kono kuruma wa gonin **made** noreru.

この車は五人まで乗れる。

This car can take up to five people.

(2) Indicates emphasis: "even."

88

Sensei **made** kōgi ni shusseki shita.

先生まで講義に出席した。

Even teachers attended the lecture.

(3) In the form "made mo nai," provides a negative emphasis: "there is no need," "need not to."

157

Kono repōto wa yomu **made** mo nai.

このレポートは読むまでもない。

There is no need to read this report.

mo



(1) Refers to the noun immediately preceding it: "too," "also," "either."

13

Chichi wa isha desu. Haha **mo** isha desu.

父は医者です。母も医者です。

My father is a doctor. My mother also is a doctor.

Terebi o minai. Rajio **mo** kikanai.

テレビを見ない。ラジオも聞かない。

I don't watch TV. I don't listen to the radio, either.

(2) Used repeatedly: "both...and...," "neither...nor..."

14

Tomu **mo** Biru **mo** Nihongo o hanasu.

トムもビルも日本語を話す。

Both Tom and Bill speak Japanese.

Kare wa tenisu **mo** gorufu **mo** shinai.

彼はテニスもゴルフもしない。

He plays neither tennis nor golf.

(3) Used with an interrogative word: "nothing," "nobody," "nowhere," etc.

43

Soko ni wa nani **mo** arimasen.

そこには何もありません。

There is nothing there.

Dare **mo** kare no jūsho o shiranai.

だれも彼の住所を知らない。

Nobody knows his address.

60

(4) Provides emphasis: "as many (much) as," "not even."

Hon o gosatsu **mo** kaimashita.

本を五冊も買いました。

I bought as many as five books.

Ike ni sakana wa ippliki **mo** imasen.

池に魚は一匹もいません。

There isn't even one fish in the pond.

mono もの

181

(1) A sentence-final particle indicating a reason or excuse.

"Naze ikanai no." "Isogashii **mono**."

「なぜ行かないの。」「忙しいもの。」

"Why don't you go?" "I'm busy, you know."

mono ka ものか

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used mainly by men to indicate a negative determination or a rhetorical question.

183

Anna tokoro e nido to iku **mono ka**.

あんな所へ二度と行くものか。

I'll never go to such a place again.

mono no ものの

(1) Used as a conjunction: "but," "although."

158

Sekkyō suru **mono no**, jikkō wa muzukashii.

説教するものの、実行は難しい。

Although you may preach it, it's difficult to practice.

na な

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used by men for confirmation of a statement.

172

Ano bā wa takai **na**.

あのバーは高いな。

That bar is expensive, isn't it?

(2) A sentence-final particle. Used by men to indicate prohibition.

173

Ima, iku **na**.

今、行くな。

Don't go now.

nā なあ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used mostly by men to indicate emotion.

174

Yūbe wa samukatta **nā**.

昨夜は寒かったなあ。

How cold it was last night!

(2) A sentence-final particle indicating a desire.

175

Kyō kanojo ga kuru to ii **nā**.

今日彼女が来るといいなあ。

I wish she would come today.

nado など

(1) Indicates a partial list of items: "among other things," "and so forth."

12

Toshokan ni hon ya zasshi **nado** ga aru.

図書館に本や雑誌などがある。

There are books and magazines (among other things) in the library.

(2) Expresses "something to the effect."

112

Kare wa gakkō o yameru **nado** to itte iru.

彼は学校を辞めるなどと言っている。

He says something to the effect that he is quitting school.

(3) Indicates examples: "such things like," "or something."

119

Watashi wa bara **nado** suki desu.
私はばらなど好きです。
I like things like roses.

(4) Indicates a deprecatory or humble attitude.

152

Watashi **nado**, totemo kore wa yakuse-masen.
私など、とてもこれは訳せません。
Someone like me could never translate this.

nagara ながら

(1) Indicates simultaneous actions by one subject: "while," "as."

67

Rajio o kikinagara benkyō shimasu.
ラジオを聞きながら勉強します。
I study while listening to the radio.

(2) Used as a conjunction: "although," "though," "but."

92

O-kane ga arinagara haraimasen.
お金がありながら払いません。
Although he has money, he doesn't pay.

(3) Used with numbers and counters: "both," "all."

101

Kono ie wa nikken **nagara** furui desu.
この家は二軒ながら古いです。
Both of these houses are old.

nara なら

(1) Used as a conjunction, indicates a supposition or condition: "if."

74

Watashi **nara**, sonna koto wa shinai.
我なら、そんな事はしない。
If I were you, I wouldn't do such a thing.

(2) Indicates a topic: "as for."

75

Yōsho **nara**, sangai ni arimasu.
洋書なら、三階にあります。
As for foreign books, they're on the third floor.

nari なり

(1) Indicates a choice: "either...or," "whether...or."

127

Oda-san **nari** watashi **nari** ga kaigi ni shusseki shimasu.
小田さんなり私なりが会議に出席します。

Either Mr. Oda or I will attend the meeting.

Iku **nari** yameru **nari** hayaku kimemashō.
行くなり止めるなり早く決めましょう。
Let's decide quickly whether we are going or not.

(2) Used with an interrogative word: "anything," "anyone," "any time," etc.

128

Nan **nari** to itte kudasai.
何なりと言って下さい。
Please say anything.

Itsu **nari** to kite kudasai.
いつなりと来て下さい。
Please come any time.

(3) Expresses "as soon as."

145

Asagohan o taberu **nari**, ie o deta.
朝ご飯を食べるなり、家を出た。
As soon as I ate breakfast, I left the house.

ne ね

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used for confirmation of a statement.

164

Samui desu **ne**.
寒いですね。
It's cold, isn't it?

(2) A sentence-final particle. Used to soften a request or suggestion.

165

Zehi o-negai shimasu **ne**.
ぜひお願いしますね。
Please be sure to do it.

Mō kaerimashō **ne**.
もう帰りましょうね。
Let's go home, O.K.?

(3) A sentence-final particle. Gives a reason or cause.

166

Kyō wa ikenai. Kaigi ga aru kara **ne**.
今日は行けない。会議があるからね。
I can't go today. I have a meeting, you know.

né めえ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Indicates emotion.

167

Omoshiroi hanashi deshita **né**.
面白い話でしたねえ。
What an interesting talk was it!

ni に

(1) Indicates the location or existence of animate and inanimate things: "in," "at," "on,"

4

Asoko **ni** kōen ga arimasu.
あそこに公園があります。
There is a park over there.

Tanaka-san wa heyā **ni** imasu.
田中さんは部屋にいます。
Mr. Tanaka is in the room.

(2) Indicates time and frequency: "at," "on," "in," "every."

7

Ichiji **ni** kite kudasai.

一時に来て下さい。

Please come at one o'clock.

Kare wa ichinichi oki **ni** kuru.

彼は一日おきに来る。

He comes every other day.

(3) Indicates an indirect object: "to."

15

Watashi wa ane **ni** tegami o kaita.

私は姉に手紙を書いた。

I wrote a letter to my older sister.

(4) Indicates the surface of something on which a certain action takes place: "on."

16

Gakusei ga kokuban **ni** kanji o kaite imasu.

学生が黒板に漢字を書いています。

A student is writing kanji on the blackboard.

5) Indicates a point of arrival: "at."

30

Densha ga eki **ni** tsukimashita.

電車が駅に着きました。

A train arrived at the station.

(6) Indicates an entering motion: "on," "in."

31

Shinjuku de densha **ni** norimashita.

新宿で電車に乗りました。

I got on a train at Shinjuku.

(7) Indicates purpose with a motion verb: "for," "to do something."

32

Ashita kaimono **ni** ikimasu.

明日買物に行きます。

I'll go shopping tomorrow.

Ringo o kai **ni** mise ni haitta.

りんごを買いに店に入った。

I entered a store to buy apples.

(8) Used with verbs naru, suru and others to indicate a change or choice: "to become," "to make."

44

Kare wa pariotto **ni** narimasu.

彼はパイロットになります。

He will become a pilot.

Kaigi wa kayōbi **ni** shimashō

会議は火曜日にしましょう。

Let's have the meeting on Tuesday.

50

(9) Indicates a person who gives a thing or provides a service: "from."

Chichi **ni** kamera o moraimashita.

父にカメラをもらいました。

I received a camera from my father.

Hara-san **ni** yūbinkyoku e itte moratta.

原さんに郵便局へ行ってもらった。

I had Miss Hara go to the post office for me.

(10) Indicates the one acting or the one acted upon: "by".

107

Watashi wa sensei **ni** shikarareta.

私は先生に叱られた。

I was scolded by by teacher.

Sensei wa gakusei **ni** hon o yomaseru.

先生は学生に本を読ませる。

The teacher makes students read books.

Kare wa tomodachi **ni** sake o nomaserareta.

彼は友達に酒を飲ませられた。

He was made to drink sake by his friends.

(11) Joins two or more nouns to indicate a list of items.

132

Enkai de wain **ni** uisukii **ni** sake ga deta.

宴会でワインにウイスキーに酒が出た。

At the banquet, wine, whisky, and sake were served.

(12) Connects two or more items to indicate a matching or contrasting.

133

Fuji-san **ni** sakura

富士山に桜

Mt. Fuji and cherry blossoms

ni shite wa にしては

(1) Indicates a generally agreed upon standard; "for," "considering that."

134

Kare wa Amerikajin **ni shite wa** se ga hikui.

彼はアメリカ人にしては背が低い。

He is short for an American.

ni totte にとって

(1) Indicates an effect on or value of a person or thing; "for."

135

Yasai wa karada **ni totte** ii desu.

野菜は体にとっていいです。

Vegetables are good for the body.

ni tsuite について

(1) Expresses "about" or "concerning" something or someone

136

Nihon no keizai **ni tsuite** hanashite kudasai.

日本の経済について話して下さい。

Please speak about the Japanese economy.

no の

(1) Used between two nouns, indicates possession, location, or a modifying phrase: "s," "of," "in," "on," "under."

5

Kore wa watashi **no** jisho desu.

これは私の辞書です。

This is my dictionary.

Tsukue **no** ue ni hako ga aru.

机の上に箱がある。

There is a box on the desk.

Tomu wa Nihongo **no** gakusei da.

トムは日本語の学生だ。

Tom is a student of Japanese.

(4) Indicates a modified pronoun: "one."

72

Chairo **no** o kudasai.

茶色のを下さい。

Give me a brown one.

Shi o kaku **no** wa Oda-san desu.

詩を書くのは小田さんです。

The one who writes poetry is Miss Oda.

(2) Indicates apposition.

19

Ano hito wa shachō **no** Miki-san desu.

あの人は社長の三木さんです。

That person is Mr. Miki, president of the company.

3) Indicates the subject of a relative clause.

69

Kare **no** kaku hon wa omoshiroi.

彼の書く本は面白い。

The books that he writes are interesting.

(5) Used to nominalize verbs and sentences.

73

Narau **no** wa oshieru **no** yori yasashii.

習うのは教えるのより易しい。

Learning is easier than teaching.

Hara-san ga yameru **no** o shiranakatta.

原さんが辞めるのを知らなかつた。

I didn't know that Mr. Hara is quitting.

(6) In the form "no desu," indicates or asks an explanation or reason:

97

"Naze ikanai **no** desu ka." "Atama ga itai **no** desu."

「なぜ行かないのですか。」「頭が痛いのです。」

"Why don't you go?" "I have a headache."

(7) A sentence-final particle. Indicates a question, a softer tone, or a mild command. Used usually by women.

176

"Doko e iku **no**," "Uchi e kaeru **no**."

「どこへ行くの。」「うちへ帰るの。」

"Where are you going?" "Going home"

Koko de asobanai **no**.

ここで遊ばないの。

Don't play here.

node ので

(1) Used as a conjunction, indicates a cause or reason: "because."

71

Shiai ga aru **node**, mainichi renshū shite iru.

試合があるので、毎日練習している。

Because there's a tournament, we practice every day.

nomi のみ

(1) Indicates a limit on things, actions, or states: "only," "alone."

87

Kachō **nomi** (ga) enkai ni shusseki shita.

課長のみ (が) 宴会に出席した。

The section chief alone attended the banquet.

Kono ie wa ōkii **nomi** desu.

この家は大きいのみです。

This house is large, that's all.

(2) Used in the form nomi narazu: "not only... but also."

144

Kaiga **nomi** narazu chōkoku mo mita.

絵画のみならず彫刻も見た。

I saw not only paintings but also sculptures.

noni のに

(1) Used as a conjunction to indicate "although" or "in spite of the fact that."

91

Kanojo wa netsu ga aru **noni**, kusuri o nomanai.

彼女は熱があるのに、薬を飲まない。

Although she has a fever, she doesn't take medicine.

(2) Indicates a purpose or function "in order to do."

96

Sakubun o kaku **noni** wāpuro o tsukaimasu.

作文を書くのにワープロを使います。

I use a word processor to write a composition.

○ を

(1) Indicates the direct object of a verb.

9

Hachiji ni asagohan **o** tabemasu.

八時に朝ご飯を食べます。

I eat breakfast at eight o'clock.

(2) Indicates a point of departure.

28

Maiasa kuji ni ie **o** demasu.

毎朝九時に家を出ます。

I leave my house at nine o'clock every morning.

(3) Indicates a route of motion: "in," "on," "along," "through."

29

Hiroi michi o arukimashita.

広い道を歩きました。

I walked along a wide road.

(4) Indicates an occupation or position.

45

Watashi no chichi wa isha o shite imasu.

私の父は医者をしています。

My father is a doctor.

(5) Used with an emotive verb, indicates the cause of human emotion.

53

Watashi wa kare no seikō o yorokonde imasu.

私は彼の成功を喜んでいます。

I'm happy about his success.

sa さ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used mostly by men to indicate slight emphasis.

178

Kore ga shashin sa.

これが写真さ。

This is the photo (that I told you of).

sae さえ

(1) Indicates emphasis: "even."

89

Sonna koto wa saru (de) sae dekiru.

そんな事は猿（で）さえ出来る。

Even a monkey can do that.

(2) Used to emphasize a condition: "if only," "as long as."

90

Benkyō sae sureba, ii daigaku ni hairemasu.

勉強さえすれば、いい大学に入れます。

If you just study, you can get into a good college.

shi も

(1) Used as a conjunction, indicates two or more actions or states: "and," "as well as," "and what's more."

104

Kare wa e mo kaku shi shashin mo torimasu.

彼は絵も描くし写真もとります。

He paints as well as takes photographs.

(2) Used as a conjunction, indicates a reason: "because," "so."

105

Ashita shiken ga aru shi, konban asobi ni ikemasen.

明日試験があるし、今晚遊びに行けません。

I have an examination tomorrow, so I can't go out for fun tonight.

shika しか

(1) Indicates a limit on items or quantity with a negative verb: "no one but," "nothing but," "only."

102

Miki-san **shika** tabako o suimasen.

三木さんしかたばこを吸いません。

Only Mr. Miki smokes.

Tōsuto o ichimai **shika** tabenakatta.

トーストを一枚しか食べなかつた。

I ate only one piece of toast.

(2) In the form "shika nai," indicates a restriction on the verb: "to have no choice but to."

103

Kyō wa isogashii kara, ashita iku **shika** arimasen.

今日は忙しいから、明日行くしかありません。

Because I'm busy today, I have no choice but go tomorrow.

sura すら

(1) Indicates emphasis: "even."

151

Akanbō (de) **sura** oyogemasu.

赤ん坊 (で) すら泳げます。

Even a baby can swim.

tara たら

(1) Used as a conjunction, indicates a supposition or condition: "if."

80

Yuki ga futtara, jitensha ni noremasan.

雪が降つたら、自転車に乗れません。

If it snows, I can't ride a bicycle.

(2) Used as a conjunction, indicates an action which takes place before the action in the main clause takes place: "when," "after."

81

Kono shigoto o sumasetara, uchi e kaerimasu.

この仕事を済ませたら、うちへ帰ります。

When I finish this work, I'll go home.

(3) A sentence-final particle indicating a suggestion or proposal.

185

Kono hon o yondara.

この本を読んだら。

Why not read this book?

tari たり

(1) Lists two or more actions in no particular sequence: "things like."

94

Nondari tabetari odottari shita.

飲んだり食べたり踊ったりした。

We did things like drinking, eating, and dancing.

(2) Indicates actions or states that alternate.

95

Hito ga ittari kitari shite iru.

人が行ったり来たりしている。

People are coming and going.

te mo ても

115

(1) Used as a conjunction: "even if."

83

Hajimete **mo** ii desu ka.

始めてもいいですか。

May we start? (Is it all right even if we start?)

(2) Used with a set of contrastive verbs and adjectives: "whether or not"

84

Yamada-san ga itte **mo** ikanakute **mo** watashi wa ikimasu.

山田さんが行つても行かなくても私は行きます。

I'll go whether Mr. Yamada will or not.

Takakute **mo** yasukute **mo** kaimasen.

高くても安くても買いません。

Whether it's expensive or inexpensive, I won't buy it.

(3) Used with an interrogative word: "no matter what, when, where, who, etc."

85

Itsu **kite** **mo**, kare wa rusu desu.

いつ来ても、彼は留守です。

No matter when I come, he is out.

Nani o shite **mo**, kanojo wa jōzu da.

何をしても、彼女は上手だ。

No matter what she does, she's good.

(4) Indicates an approximate limit: "at the most."

Kōgi wa nagakute **mo** nijikan gurai darō.

講義は長くとも二時間ぐらいだろう。

The lecture would last two hours at the most.

te wa では

86

(1) Indicates a condition that will bring about a negative conclusion.

Koko de tabete **wa** ikemasen.

ここで食べてはいけません。

You shouldn't eat here. (If you eat here, it isn't good.)

(2) Indicates repetition of an action.

131

Gakusei ga kokuban ni kanji o kaite **wa** keshi, kaite **wa** keshi shite iru.

学生が黒板に漢字を書いては消し、書いては消している。

The student writes kanji on the blackboard, erases them, then writes and erases them again.

to と

10

(1) Indicates a complete list of items: "and."

Oda-san **to** Hara-san wa enjinia desu.

小田さんと原さんはエンジニアです。

Mr. Oda and Mr. Hara are engineers.

(2) Indicates a person with whom an action is performed: "with."

18

Watashi wa ani **to** tenisu o shita.

私は兄とテニスをした。

I played tennis with my older brother.

(3) Indicates a quotation or what someone thinks or hears.

33

Jimu ga "Ohayō" **to** iimashita.

ジムが「お早よう」と言いました。

Jim said, "Good morning."

Tsuri ni ikō **to** omoimasu.

釣りに行こうと思います。

I think I'll go fishing.

(4) In the form "to iu," indicates the name of something: "is called."

34

Miki **to** iu hito ga kimashita.

三木という人が来ました。

A person called Miki came.

(5) Indicates a comparison; "or."

37

Kono tokei **to** sono tokei **to**, dochira ga takai desu ka.

この時計とその時計と、どちらが高いですか。

Which is more expensive, this watch or that one?

(6) Indicates a condition that brings about an uncontrollable result: "if," "when."

76

Haru ga kuru **to**, atatakaku narimasu.

春が来ると、暖かくなります。

When spring comes, it gets warm.

(7) Emphasize a number in a negative sentence: "not even."

118

Eki made aruite gofun **to** kakaranai.

駅まで歩いて五分とかからない。

It won't take even five minutes to get to the station on foot.

(8) Expresses "is about to do something," "trying (often unsuccessfully) to do something."

125

Dekakeyō **to** shita toki, denwa ga natta.

出かけようとした時、電話が鳴った。

When I was about to leave, the telephone rang.

Tatō **to** shita ga tatenakatta.

立とうとしたが立てなかった。

I tried to stand up, but I couldn't.

(9) Lists conditions in spite of which the main verb is true: "even if," "whether...or not."

126

Arashi ga koyō **to** kōzui ga koyō **to**, kono ie wa anzen da.

あらしが来ようと洪水が来ようと、この家は安全だ。

Even if a storm comes or a flood comes, this house is safe.

Ame ga furō **to** furumai **to**, ikimasu.

雨が降ろうと降るまいと、行きます。

Whether it rains or not, I'll go.

to ka とか

(1) A combination of **to** and **ka**: "something like," "something to the effect."

35

Hiru **to ka** iu Amerikajin ni atta.

ヒルとかいうアメリカ人に会った。

I met an American called something like Hill.

Rinda ga kekkon suru **to ka** kiita.

リンダが結婚するとか聞いた。

I heard something to the effect that Linda is getting married.

toka とか

(1) Indicates a list of two or more items or actions that is not exhaustive: "among other things," "things like."

93

Depāto de kutsu **toka** sētā **toka** (o) kaimashita.

デパートで靴とかセーターとか(を) 買いました。

I bought shoes, sweaters, and other things at the department store.

Yasumi ni wa tenisu o suru **toka** hon o yomu **toka** shimasu.

休みにはテニスをするとか本を読むとかします。

On holidays I do things like playing tennis or reading books.

tokoro ところ

(1) Indicates an action about to take place, or is/has been/was taking place, or has taken/took place.

64

Ima dekakeru **tokoro** desu.

今出かけるところです。

I'm just about to go out.

Shukudai o shite iru **tokoro** desu.

宿題をしているところです。

I'm in the midst of doing my homework.

Kare wa dekaketa **tokoro** desu.

彼は出かけたところです。

He has just left.

(2) Used as a conjunction, indicates a condition that brings about a discovery: "when."

82

Mō ichido shirabeta **tokoro**, kono dēta wa machigatte ita.

もう一度調べたところ、このデータは間違っていた。

When I checked again, this data was wrong.

tokoro de ところで

(1) Used as a conjunction: "even if."

159

Isoida **tokoro de**, ma ni aimasen.

急いだところで、間に合いません。

Even if we hurry, we won't be in time.

tomo とも

(1) Used with numbers and counters:
“both,” “all.”

100

Kare no kuruma wa nidai **tomo** ōkii.
彼の車は二台とも大きい。
Both of his cars are big.

(2) Indicates inclusion: “including.”

106

Gopāsentō no tesūryō **tomo** (de) 100 doru haratta.
五パーセントの手数料とも（で）100ドル
払った。
I paid 100 dollars including a five percent
commission.

(3) Indicates an approximate maximum
or minimum: “at least,” “at most.”

116

Kore wa sukunaku **tomo** gosenen ijo deshō.
これは少なくとも五千円以上でしょう。
This would cost more than 5,000 yen at
least.

Gaikoku no baiyā wa ōku **tomo** rokujūnin gurai datta darō.
外国のバイヤーは多くとも六十人ぐらい
だつただろう。
The (number of) foreign buyers was
about sixty at most.

(4) Expresses “can't say
whether...or...”

137

Kono sakuhin wa kessaku **tomo** dasaku **tomo** iemasen.

この作品は傑作とも駄作とも言えません。
I can't tell whether this work is a masterpiece or trash.

(5) Adds emphasis to a supposition:
“no matter what,” “even if.”

153

Nani ga okorō **tomo**, saigo made gan-barō.

何が起ろうとも、最後まで頑張ろう。

No matter what will happen, let's do
our best to the end.

Kare ga yameyō **tomo**, kono kikaku wa kawaranai.

彼が辞めようとも、この企画は変わらない。
Even if he should resign, this plan won't
change.

(6) In the form “tomo arō hito,” indicates
someone who has acted contrary
to a general opinion about him/her.

154

Keikan **tomo** arō hito ga nusumi o shita.

警官ともあろう人が盗みをした。

Although he is supposed to be a policeman,
he stole something.

(7) A sentence-final particle indicating
an assertion.

182

Motto benkyō suru **tomo**.

もっと勉強するとも。

I will definitely study harder.

toshite として

(1) Indicates status, capacity, or function: "as."

140

Kare wa tsūyaku **toshite** yatowareta.

彼は通訳として雇われた。

He was hired as an interpreter.

(2) Provides emphasis in a negative sentence: "without exception."

141

Kono mise ni wa hitotsu **toshite** yasui mono wa nai.

この店には一つとして安い物はない。

There isn't a single item that is inexpensive in this store.

wa は

(1) Indicates the topic of a sentence: "as for."

1

Watashi **wa** isha desu.

私は医者です。

I am a doctor. (As for me, I'm a doctor.)

Ashita **wa** hatarakimasen.

明日は働きません。

Tomorrow I don't work.

(2) Indicates contrast between two items.

6

Kanji **wa** muzukashii. Hiragana **wa** yasashii.

漢字は難しい。ひらがなは易しい。

Kanji is difficult. Hiragana is easy.

(3) Indicates that a number is the highest or lowest limit: "at least," "at the highest."

117

Kono jisho wa ichiman'en **wa** suru.

この辞書は一万円はする。

This dictionary costs at least 10,000 yen.

Kono kabin wa gosen'en **wa** shinai.

この花瓶は五千円はしない。

This flower vase couldn't cost any more than 5,000 yen.

(4) Emphasizes contrasting elements.

139

Bā de nomi **wa** shita ga, shokuji ni wa ikanakatta.

バーで飲みはしたが、食事には行かなかった。

We did drink at the bar, but didn't go out for dinner.

wa わ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used by women to soften the tone of a statement.

177

Wada-san **wa** konai to omou **wa**.

和田さんは来ないと思うわ。

I think that Miss Wada won't come.

ya や

(1) Joins two or more nouns to indicate a partial list of items: "and others," "etc."

11

Biru **ya** Jon ga tenisu o shite iru.

ビルやジョンがテニスをしている。

Bill, John, and others are playing tennis.

(2) In the form "...ya ina ya," indicates "as soon as."

147

Okiru ya ina ya, mado o aketa.

起きるやいなや、窓を開けた。

As soon as I got up, I opened the window.

3) A sentence-final particle. Used by men to soften a statement, request or suggestion.

184

Kore wa umai ya.

これはうまいや。

This is tasty.

Mō yameyō ya.

もう止めようや。

Let's quit now.

yara やら

(1) Lists two or more items of a longer list: "such things as."

113

Depāto de sētā **yara** kutsu **yara** takusan katta.

デパートでセーターやら靴やら沢山買った。

I bought a lot of such things as sweaters and shoes at the department store.

(2) Indicates uncertainty: "something," "someone."

114

Hako no naka ni nani **yara** arimasu.

箱の中に何やらあります。

There is something in the box.

Ame **yara** kiri **yara** wakarimasen.

雨やら霧やら分かりません。

I can't tell whether it's rain or fog.

(3) A sentence-final particle. Indicates a rhetorical question with negative implication: "I wonder."

186

Kono ame wa itsu yamu (no) **yara**.

この雨はいつ止む (の) やら。

I wonder when this rain will stop.

yo よ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Indicates a strong conviction.

168

Hara-san wa ashita kimasu **yo**.

原さんは明日来ますよ。

Miss Hara will come tomorrow for sure.

(2) A sentence-final particle. Indicates a request or suggestion.

169

Hachiji ni kite kudasai **yo**.

八時に来て下さいよ。

Come at eight o'clock.

Chotto yasumimashō **yo**.

ちょっと休みましょうよ。

Let's take a break.

yori より

(1) Indicates a starting point in time and space: "from."

21

Kaigi wa niji **yori** okonawareru.

会議は二時より行なわれる。

The meeting will be held from two o'clock.

Ōsaka-yuki wa niban hōmu **yori** hassha shimasu.

大阪行きは二番ホームより発車します。

The train bound for Osaka leaves from platform No. 2.

2) Indicates a comparison: "than."

38

Kore wa sore **yori** karui desu.

これはそれより軽いです。

This is lighter than that.

Terebi o miru **yori** hon o yomitai.

テレビを見るより本を読みたい。

I'd rather read a book than watch TV.

(3) Used with an interrogative, indicates the superlative: "better than anyone, anywhere, etc."

39

Kono kōen wa doko **yori** (mo) shizuka desu.

この公園はどこより（も）静かです。

This park is quieter than anywhere else.

ze ゼ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used by men to add force to a sentence.

187

Saki ni iku **ze**.

先に行くぜ。

I'm going on ahead.

zo ゾ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used by men to add force to a sentence or to indicate a question to oneself.

188

Jikan da **zo**. Sorosoro dekakeru **zo**.

時間だぞ。そろそろ出かけるぞ。

It's time. I'm leaving now.

Doa ga aite iru. Hen da **zo**.

ドアが開いている。変だぞ。

The door is open. Strange!

EXERCISE 1 (1-3)

1. wa 2. ga, ga 3. ga, wa 4. wa
 5. wa, ga, ga 6. ga, ga 7. ga, wa
 8. ga 9. wa 10. wa, ga

EXERCISE 2 (4-6)

- A. 1. ni, ga 2. ni, ga 3. ni, ga, ga
 4. wa, ni, ni 5. ni, ga 6. ni, ga, ga
 B. 1. no, ni, ga 2. wa, ni, no, ni
 3. wa, no, no 4. wa, no, ni 5. no,
 ni, ga 6. no, wa 7. wa, wa 8. ga,
 no, no 9. wa, wa 10. no, no, ni, ga
 11. no, wa, no, ni wa 12. no,
 ni(wa), ga, ni wa, ga

EXERCISE 3 (7-9)

- A. 1. X, ni 2. X/ni 3. X, ni 4. X, X
 5. X, ni 6. ni, X 7. X/ni, ni
 B. 1. wa, e 2. X, no, e 3. ni, o 4. o,
 no, o 5. wa, X 6. wa, wa, wa
 7. ni, o, ni 8. no, e wa, no, e wa
 9. e, wa, ni 10. e no, wa, X

EXERCISE 4 (10-12)

1. no, to, o 2. no, ni, ya, nado
 3. to, ni 4. to, ni, e 5. ni, X, ya,
 o/nado 6. X/ni, ya, e 7. no, ya,
 no, nado, no, ni 8. no, no, ni, ya
 9. no, to, o 10. to, ni, e 11. to, wa,
 X 12. ya, o/nado, wa, wa

EXERCISE 5 (13-15)

- A. 1. mo, mo 2. to 3. mo, mo
 4. to, to 5. to, to 6. mo, mo
 7. mo, mo

- B. 1. no, mo, no 2. no, no, mo
 3. ni, ga, no, ni mo 4. no, ni mo, ni mo
 5. ni, e, e mo 6. wa, mo, mo
 7. no, ni, o 8. ni, o 9. ni, ni, o
 10. ni mo, ni mo 11. wa, ni(wa), ni wa

EXERCISE 6 (16-19)

- A. 1. de, 2. ni, de 3. ni 4. de
 5. ni, de
 B. 1. ni, ga, wa, ni, o 2. de, o, no, de
 mo 3. to, X 4. no, to, de 5. de, de
 wa 6. no, to, de 7. no, ni, ni, ga
 8. ni, no, to no 9. de, ga, no, de mo
 10. ga, no, no

EXERCISE 7 (20-22)

1. to, made 2. wa, kara 3. wa,
 no, kara/yori 4. e, ya, kara mo
 5. de, made no, o 6. no, kara no
 7. made, to, de 8. kara/yori, ni
 9. no, kara/yori, no, made 10. no,
 made ni, kara

EXERCISE 8 (23-26)

1. ni, ga, kurai/hodo/bakari 2. de, o,
 kurai/hodo/bakari 3. kara, ga, kurai/
 hodo/bakari 4. no, ni, kurai/
 hodo/bakari 5. o, to, o, kurai/
 hodo/bakari 6. kurai / hodo / bakari,
 ni, o 7. ni, kurai, ni 8. X, de, o
 9. de, o 10. kara, made, de, kurai
 11. to, de, de wa 12. kara, made, de,
 kurai 13. ni, de, o 14. de, o, de mo

EXERCISE 9 (27-29)

1. ka, no, ka 2. ni, to, o 3. ni, ka, o
 4. kara, made, o 5. wa, ka, ni 6. hodo,
 no, de, o 7. o, de, de 8. de, o, made
 9. o, no, de 10. no, ka, ni, o

EXERCISE 10 (30-32)

- A. 1. niji ni kyōto ni tsuku 2. getsuyōbi made ni Honkon ni tsuku 3. Ueno de densha ni noru 4. jūdō kurabu ni hairu 5. shokujii ni iku 6. gorufu o shi ni kuru 7. hon o kai ni mire ni hairu
- B. 1. ni, no, no, ni 2. de, no, ni 3. to, e, ni 4. kara no, ni, ni 5. o, ni, no, ni 6. mo, mo, ni 7. made ni, ni 8. ni, e, o, ni 9. kara, e, ni 10. o, no, ni

EXERCISE 11 (33-35)

1. made, ni, to 2. ni, to, ni, to
 3. de, to, to 4. ka, de, to 5. to, ga, ni
 6. ni, ni, to 7. mo, mo, ni, to ka
 8. made, to, o 9. ni, to, ni, to ka
 10. to ka, de, o, kara, de, e

EXERCISE 12 (36-38)

1. de, wa 2. no, de, ni 3. no, de, ga
 4. to, to 5. to, to, de 6. wa, yori
 7. ni, o, yori 8. o, yori, ni 9. de,
 de, yori 10. de, yori, de, o

EXERCISE 13 (39-41)

- A. 1. de, yori 2. no, yori 3. de, ga,
 yori 4. yori, o, ni 5. wa, ga, yori

B. 1. kurai 2. kurai 3. hodo 4. hodo
 5. kurai 6. hodo 7. kurai 8. hodo
 9. kurai 10. hodo

EXERCISE 14 (42-44)

1. ka, no, o 2. ka, to, ni, to 3. de,

ka, o 4. ka to, ka e 5. ni, ka, mo
 6. ka e, e mo, de, o 7. o, ni 8. to,
 to, ni, ni 9. wa, no, ni 10. wa,
 yori, ni

EXERCISE 15 (45-47)

1. no, no, o 2. made, no, de, o 3. no,
 de, no, o 4. wa, demo, demo 5. no,
 demo 6. no, demo, hodo 7. to demo,
 de 8. to demo, ni 9. o, ni, made demo
 10. no, wa, demo 11. ni, ni, demo
 12. kara demo, kara demo

EXERCISE 16 (48-50)

- A. 1. de 2. ni/kara 3. ni/kara 4. de
 5. kara 6. de 7. kara 8. ni

B. 1. de, no, ni 2. no, de, no 3. mo,
 mo, ni/kara, o 4. no, de, to ka
 5. no, de, to 6. ni/kara, ni, o 7. ni,
 no, o 8. ni, o, ni, e

EXERCISE 17 (51-53)

- A. 1. o, ga 2. ga, o 3. o, ga 4. o, ga
 5. ga, o 6. ga, ga/o

B. 1. wa, ga 2. ga, ga, gurai 3. no, de,
 ga 4. no, kara, ga 5. yori, ga 6.
 ga, ga, wa 7. ni, e, ga, mo 8. no, o,
 yori

EXERCISE 18 (54-56)

1. no, de, o 2. wa, de, ga, wa 3. de, o,
 de 4. kara, made, de, de 5. de, ni, de
 6. no, de, o, de 7. o, de, de 8. de,
 dake, wa 9. to dake, de 10. dake no,
 ni, dake 11. de, to, dake, ni

EXERCISE 19 (57-59)

1. yori, dake 2. de, made, o, dake
 3. to, e, o, dake 4. dake, hodo 5.
 no, de, dake 6. no, de, ga 7. made
 ni, de, to 8. e, demo 9. wa, ni
 demo 10. ni, demo

EXERCISE 20 (60-62)

1. o, mo 2. e wa, mo, ga, e wa, mo
 3. de, kara, mo 4. ni, ni, ga, mo
 5. demo, demo, demo 6. kara, made,
 bakari 7. de, to, bakari 8. ni, o, bakari
 9. o, bakari 10. no, de bakari, o

EXERCISE 21 (63-65)

1. bakari/tokoro, mo 2. kara no, ni,
 bakari/tokoro 3. to, ni, tokoro
 4. no, o, tokoro 5. no, ni, o, tokoro
 6. de, o, bakari/tokoro 7. ga, made,
 de 8. wa, ga, made ni, o 9. ga, wa,
 e, o, ni 10. ga, ni, ni, o, tokoro
 11. ga, ni, o, bakari/tokoro

EXERCISE 22 (66-68)

1. de, o, kara, ni 2. o, kara, de, ni
 3. o, nagara, to, mo 4. o, nagara, o
 5. o, nagara, de, o 6. ga, o, nagara,
 de, o 7. o, kara, ga, de 8. ga, no, ni
 9. ga, no, no 10. ga, o, mo

EXERCISE 23 (69-71)

- A. 1. kara 2. kara 3. kara/node
 4. node 5. kara 6. kara/node
 7. kara
 B. 1. no/ga, o 2. no, ni, no/ga

3. ni, mo, kara/node, ga 4. ga,
 made ni, kara, demo 5. ga,
 kara/node 6. kara, mo, ni

EXERCISE 24 (72-74)

1. de, no, no 2. ni, no 3. no, no, ni
 4. to, no, to 5. to, ni, no 6. ga, no,
 made 7. kara, to, no 8. nara, kara,
 demo 9. o, (no)nara, no 10. ga/o,
 (no)nara, o

EXERCISE 25 (75-77)

1. no, nara, ni, to, de 2. nara, o, kara,
 e 3. to, kara, ga 4. ni, to, kara, ga
 5. e, to, ya, ya, nado 6. wa, to, ni
 7. de, ba, mo 8. o, ni, ba, made ni, ni
 9. o, ba, ni 10. ni, ba, de, o

EXERCISE 26 (78-80)

- A. 1. o, (no)nara, de, ba 2. ni, o, ba
 3. mo, ba, mo 4. mo, ba, mo
 5. ga/no, mo, ba, mo
 B. 1. tenki ga yokereba/yokattara
 2. Tomu ga konakereba/konakattara
 3. wakaranakereba/wakaranakattara
 4. hon ga omoshirokereba/omoshiro-
 kattara 5. ame ga fureba/futtara
 6. jikan ga areba/attara

EXERCISE 27 (81-83)

1. ni, tara, ga 2. no, ni, tara, tokoro
 3. de, o, tara, yori 4. o, tara, e, o, ni
 5. de, o, tokoro, no 6. ni, o, tokoro,
 de 7. o, te mo, made ni 8. made,
 de, te mo 9. te mo, o/ga 10. ni, o,
 wa, te mo

EXERCISE 28 (84-86)

1. wa, to, te mo, te mo 2. ga/no,
nara, te mo, te mo 3. te mo, o, nagara
4. te mo, o, mo 5. de, o, te wa 6. ga,
made, ni, te wa 7. ga, ga, te wa

EXERCISE 29 (87-89)

1. nomi, ni, to 2. ga, no, nomi
3. ga/no, ni nomi 4. ni/kara, o,
made, ni 5. ni made, no, o 6. ga,
ba, ni sae 7. de, mo, sae

EXERCISE 30 (90-92)

1. sae, o, no 2. to, sae 3. sae, te mo
4. noni, de 5. ga, noni, bakari
6. nagara, no, o 7. ni, nagara, mo

EXERCISE 31 (93-95)

1. ni, ni/kara, toka, toka 2. to, ni,
toka, de, toka 3. de, o, tari, ni, tari
4. o, ga, tari, tari 5. no, tari, tari
6. no, tari, tari

EXERCISE 32 (96-98)

- A. 1. ni 2. noni 3. ni 4. noni 5. ni
6. noni
B. 1. kara, e, noni, kurai 2. o, noni, ga
3. no, ni, kiri 4. kiri, to, to, o
5. o, no, ni, no

EXERCISE 33 (99-101)

1. o, kiri, mo 2. ni, o, kiri 3. de, o,
kiri 4. no, tomo/nagara, o

5. ga/no, tomo/nagara 6. de, tokoro,
tomo/nagara

EXERCISE 34 (102-104)

- A. 1. shika 2. dake 3. shika 4. dake
5. shika
B. 1. e, ga, shika 2. wa, de, made shika
3. made, de, shika 4. kara, de, shika
5. mo, shi, mo 6. ni, noni, mo, shi,
mo

EXERCISE 35 (105-107)

1. kara, shi, e 2. shi, shi, mo 3. de,
o, to, tomo, mo 4. mo, o, node, ni
5. ni, de, tari, o, tari 6. ni, ga/no, o
7. ni, made, o

EXERCISE 36 (108-110)

1. bakari, ni, ka 2. de, ka, mo, o
3. ni, o, ka 4. no, ka, ka 5. ni, o, ka,
ka 6. dano, dano, dano, no 7. e, dano,
de, dano

EXERCISE 37 (111-113)

1. kara, ga, dano, dano 2. dano, dano,
kara, ka, ka 3. no, wa, yori, nado
4. yara, yara, made 5. o, noni, yara,
yara, yara

EXERCISE 38 (114-116)

1. o, no, yara, yara 2. ni, yara, mo
3. ga/no, yara, yara 4. te mo, kara,
hodo 5. no, no, tomo, gurai
6. o, noni, tomo

EXERCISE 39 (117-119)

1. de, ba, wa 2. ga, wa 3. ni,
 (no)nara, wa 4. de, made, to 5. to,
 to, nagara 6. o, (no)nara, nado
 7. o, (no)nara, nado

EXERCISE 40 (120-122)

1. demo, kurai 2. sae, kurai 3. o,
 kara/node, ga, kurai/hodo 4. to,
 kurai/hodo, ga, ni 5. ba, hodo, ga
 6. ba, hodo, noni

EXERCISE 41 (123-125)

1. dake, kara, no 2. kara, o, dake
 3. ni, (no)nara, ba, dake/hodo
 4. ga/no, ba, dake/hodo 5. ni, to, ga,
 ga 6. o, to, kara, ni

EXERCISE 42 (126-128)

1. to, to, de 2. ga, to, ga, to 3. ba,
 nari, de, nari 4. nara, nari, nari
 5. de, kara, nari 6. de, nari, no

EXERCISE 43 (129-131)

1. koso, ga/no, yori 2. kara, koso, ni
 3. de koso, ga 4. ga, de, koso, ga 5.
 ni, koso, ni, mo 6. e, te wa, o, mo

EXERCISE 44 (132-134)

1. ga, no, ni, ni 2. ga/no, ni 3. ni,
 no, ga, o 4. ni, ni, no, ga 5. ni shite
 wa, ga 6. ni, ni shite wa, ga

EXERCISES 45 (135-137)

1. ni totte, o, no 2. ni totte mo, ni totte
 mo 3. o, nagara, ni tsuite
 4. ni tsuite wa, to, no 5. bakari, kara,
 tomo, tomo 6. mo, ga, tomo, tomo

EXERCISE 46 (138-140)

1. ga, ga, made, de 2. ga, ga,
 (no)nara 3. ga, wa, wa 4. to, wa,
 shika 5. toshite, nagara, o 6. ga,
 kara/node, o, toshite

EXERCISE 47 (141-144)

1. kara, toshite, o 2. mo, ga, toshite
 3. de, bakari/dake, mo 4. ga,
 bakari/dake, mo 5. ni, nomi, mo
 6. nomi, mo, ni

EXERCISE 48 (145-148)

- A. 1. oriru ga hayai ka/ oriru ya ina ya
 2. tsuku ga hayai ka/ tsuku ya ina ya
 3. okiru ga hayai ka / okiru ya ina ya
 B. 1. ka 2. ga, ka 3. ka 4. ya, ya

EXERCISE 49 (149-151)

1. kara/node, bakari 2. bakari, kara,
 o 3. ga, bakari, mo 4. ni, ni, bakari
 5. mo, o, noni, sura 6. ga, de, sura

EXERCISE 50 (152-154)

1. no, de(wa), nado 2. nado, ni, to
 3. ga, ni, tomo, made(wa) 4. to no,
 kara, tomo, ni 5. no, tomo, de

EXERCISE 51 (155-157)

1. e, noni, dokoro ka, mo 2. ga/no,
dokoro ka 3. ga, noni, dokoro ka,
bakari 4. ni, mo, dake ni, ga 5. no,
kara, dake ni, ni 6. (no)nara, no,
made

EXERCISE 52 (158-160)

1. ni, mono no, e, ka 2. ni, mono no,
de, e 3. de, tokoro de, noni, wa 4.
tokoro de, made, de 5. o, ni, keredo-
mo, no

EXERCISE 53 (161-163)

1. no, keredomo, te mo 2. keredomo,
ni, ni, ga 3. ni, made ni, to, ga 4. ni,
ya, e, keredomo 5. ba, de, hodo,
keredomo

EXERCISE 54 (164-171)

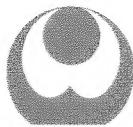
1. yo 2. ne 3. yo 4. ne 5. nē, yo
6. kashira 7. ne 8. kana

EXERCISE 55 (172-180)

1. na 2. nā 3. nē, no 4. no
5. wa, koto 6. na 7. nā 8. no, wa

EXERCISE 56 (181-188)

1. no, mono 2. kana, tomo 3. ze,
ya 4. yara 5. zo, kana 6. tara
7. mono ka



WEATHERHILL

New York & Tokyo

Particles are an essential component of the Japanese language, and a facility with their use is essential for a mastery of both spoken and written forms. This new workbook will help students acquire that facility. It introduces 60 particles and their 188 basic functions in order of frequency of usage. Each function is illustrated with example sentences, and exercises are presented every few lessons to allow users to test their understanding, writing directly in the workbook and checking their work against the answers provided. A basic vocabulary is employed throughout to allow students to concentrate fully on one important goal—the mastery of Japanese particles.

Taeko Kamiya graduated from Doshisha Women's College in Kyoto and holds masters degrees in education and linguistics. She has taught Japanese for 25 years at the Defense Language Institute in Monterey, California.

\$24.95

